



The Blessed Life

Compiled by Rev. John T. Hendricks

All references are taken from

The King James Version of the Bible

Hebrew and Greek word definitions are adapted from Strong's Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible

Teachers & Instructors:

1. Almighty God	Revelation 1:1,4
2. The Lord Jesus Christ	Revelation 1:1-2,5,17-19
3. The Holy Spirit	Rev. 1:4; 2:7-11, 17,29; 3:6, 13, 22
4. Rev. J. T. Hendricks	Matt. 28:19-20; Eph. 4:11-14; Jer. 3:15

John 4:35-36 (KJV)

^[35] Say not ye, There are yet four months, and *then* cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest. ^[36] And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together.

Akron Shalom Bible College and Seminary

Office:

3575 Darrow Road
Stow, OH 44224

LESSON: #1
LIVING THE BLESSED LIFE

THEME: HOW TO BE CONTINUALLY HAPPY, for that is what "BEING BLESSED" really is.

DEFINITION: What is the meaning of: "BLESSED"?

It means:

- (a) It is HAPPINESS at its highest level.**
- (b) It is HAPPINESS in its noblest form.**
- (c) It is HAPPINESS derived from Holiness of heart.**

QUESTION: How is this "BLESSED" STATE, this "HAPPINESS" STATE to be obtained?

ANSWER: It is obtained by walking up these NINE SPIRITUAL STAIR STEPS to the top.

CONTEXT: These NINE STAIR STEPS to CHRISTIAN MATURITY, or Divine Fullness, or COMPLETENESS to the BLESSED LIFE, are located in **Matthew 5:3-12:**

Matthew 5:3-12:

- 3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.**
- 4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.**
- 5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.**
- 6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.**
- 7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.**
- 8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.**
- 9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.**
- 10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.**
- 11 Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.**
- 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.**

ENTITLED: These NINE BE-ATTITUDES, as they are sometimes called, are given that Entitlement because they relate to our HEART ATTITUDES. Let us now get a preview of them:

1. **BLESSED** are the **POOR** in spirit
 WHY? For theirs is The Kingdom of Heaven.
2. **BLESSED** are they that **MOURN**
 Why? For they shall be comforted.
3. **BLESSED** are the **MEEK**
 Why? For they shall inherit the earth.
4. **BLESSED** are they who **DO HUNGER** and **THIRST** after **RIGHTEOUSNESS**
 Why? For they shall be **FILLED**
5. **BLESSED** are the **MERCIFUL**
 Why? For they shall obtain **MERCY**.
6. **BLESSED** are the **PURE** in heart
 Why? For they shall see **GOD**.
7. **BLESSED** are the **PEACEMAKERS**
 Why? For they shall be called the children of God
8. **BLESSED** are they who are persecuted for **RIGHTEOUSNESS'** sake
 Why? For theirs is **THE KINGDOM** of **HEAVEN**.
9. **BLESSED** are ye when **REVILED** and **PERSECUTED** for **JESUS' SAKE**
 Why? For **GREAT** is your **REWARD** in **HEAVEN**.

HERE THEY ARE: NINE SPIRITUAL STEPS TO THE “BLESSED” LIFE, to the “HAPPY” LIFE.

QUESTION: Why are there “NINE” STEPS?

ANSWER: NINE is a very unique number. It is the only NUMBER which, when multiplied by each of the NINE DIGITS — 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9 — and we observe the answer, it never ever exceeds 9 when totaled together. Try it and see.

ANSWER: Then, amazingly enough, let us continue: $9 \times 10 = 90$; $9 \times 11 = 99$; $9 \times 12 =$

108; $9 \times 13 = 117$; $9 \times 14 = 126$; $9 \times 15 = 135$; $9 \times 16 = 144$.

QUESTION: What does that tell us?

ANSWER: When you follow the steps of the NINE BE-ATTITUDES to the TOP, you have reached THE SUMMIT.

QUESTION: How many FRUIT of THE SPIRIT are there?

ANSWER: Just NINE.

How many of them are "Percolating" in your life? Mr. Webster's definition of this word is: *A kind of coffeepot in which the boiling water repeatedly bubbles up through a tube and filters back to the bottom through the coffee which is held in a perforated container.*

Translating this from the natural to the spiritual, it takes the HOLY GHOST FIRE to make these nine FRUIT to filter through our lives until we are saturated with them.

Matthew 3:11: I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.

That is why they're the "FRUIT" of THE SPIRIT. Only the Holy Spirit can produce this kind of PERFECT FRUIT.

NINE is the number of human PERFECTION, or COMPLETENESS, or FULLNESS and WHOLENESS.

JESUS said, as recorded in **Revelation 3:15: *I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.*** We need more FIRE!



QUESTION: Did you know there are NINE SPIRITUAL GIFTS in **I Corinthians 12:8-10:**

8 For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit;

9 To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;

10 To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues.

Why not seven or even eight, or ten? The Holy Spirit is communicating a very unique message to all of us.

THE BLESSED LIFE in Matthew corresponds to the BLESSED LIFE in **Galatians** and in **I Corinthians**.

THE GODHEAD — namely, GOD ALMIGHTY, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, and THE HOLY SPIRIT — desires all of us to be BLESSED, that is, to be THE HAPPIEST PEOPLE on the earth.

QUESTION: Who should be the HAPPIEST PEOPLE on the earth?

ANSWER: It should be THE GENUINE CHRISTIANS, the followers of THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.

(a) GOD sent His Son to “BLESS” you. How? In turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

Acts 3:26: Unto you first God, having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities. (Sin is a JOY killer.)

(b) ***Psalm 32:2-3:***

2 Blessed (Happy) is the man unto whom The Lord imputed not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile.

3 When I kept silence, my bones waxed old through my roaring all the day long.

(c) ***Romans 4:7: Blessed are they whose iniquities are FORGIVEN, and whose sins are COVERED.***

WHO ARE TO BE THE HAPPIEST PEOPLE on the earth?

(d) ***Luke 10:20: Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.***

(e) ***John 15:11: These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.***

(f) ***1 Peter 1:8: Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory.***

(g) Again, we REJOICE because we have at this present time, at the right hand of The Father, our GREAT HIGH PRIEST, namely The Lord Jesus Christ. You ought to get BLESSED even reading the following verses in the book of **Hebrews**:

- **2:17: Wherefore in all things it behooved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.**
- **3:1: Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus.**
- **4:14: Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.**
- **5:5-6:**
5 So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.
6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.
- **7:17: For he testifieth, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.**
- **7:26: For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens.**
- **8:1: Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens.**
- **9:11: But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building.**
- **10:20-21:**
20 Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.
21 And having an high priest over the house of God.

HE EVER LIVETH to make INTERCESSION FOR US.

Romans 8:34: Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

Hebrews 7:25: Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

QUESTION: Do you know what? TRUE HAPPINESS is not found in what we have, but in WHAT WE ARE.

Then again, HAPPINESS is not having what you want, but wanting what you have. You very likely know of people, or, even you yourself, that have wanted a HOME, a CAR, or even a MARRIAGE MATE and got who you (or they) wanted, but afterwards couldn't honestly say that they wanted who or what they had.

I seriously doubt that there is anyone here who does not LONG to be HAPPY. The Lord Jesus, most of all, wants us all to be HAPPY. To be HAPPY, we need to be BLESSED, for that is what TRUE HAPPINESS is all about. That is why our Lord Jesus, at the very commencement of His ministry, gave to us THESE NINE BE-ATTITUDES as THE DIVINE RECIPE to LASTING HAPPINESS.

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST said in this FIRST STEP to the BLESSED and HAPPY LIFE:

Matthew 5:3: Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

This verse has absolutely NOTHING to do with FINANCES or with MONEY. It is dealing DIRECTLY with our HEART PREPARATION for THE BLESSED LIFE. This is not a contradiction, but a PARADOX to the natural or carnal mind. Listen now with me to HIM!

I. THE FIRST STEP: **Blessed are the POOR in spirit: for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.**

QUESTION: Who are these "POOR IN SPIRIT"?

ANSWER: Those who are fully stripped of all of the SELF LIFE, thereby becoming NOTHING so that THE LORD JESUS can become EVERYTHING to them.

The LORD JESUS said in **John 15:5: I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.**

Hopefully we don't find this verse to be offensive to us. If so, you have not taken the first step to become BLESSED in GOD'S WAY.

(a) John 5:19: Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

(b) John 5:30: I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

(c) John 8:28: Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

ILLUSTRATION: In taking this first step to becoming POOR IN SPIRIT, we need to take a closer look at OUR BEST MODEL of the POOR in SPIRIT — THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.

2 Corinthians 8:9: For ye know the GRACE of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, that, though HE was RICH, yet, for our sakes HE BECAME "POOR", that ye through His poverty might be rich.

The LORD JESUS emptied HIMSELF and became truly dependent upon The Father for EVERYTHING.

John 5:19, 30:

19 Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

QUESTION: What does that tell us when The Lord Jesus says in **John 15:5:**

I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

ANSWER: As HE was "DEPENDENT" upon His FATHER, so we, because of our own helplessness, live in DEPENDENCE UPON HIM. Our HELPLESSNESS denotes our HUMAN WEAKNESS.

The Lord Jesus is not taking us on an “EGO” trip. This is offensive to those who are being taught how to get a HIGH SELF-IMAGE and SELF-ESTEEM. There are those who are POOR IN SPIRIT and know it, so they are ready to enter into the BLESSED LIFE.

Then there are those who are POOR in spirit, but don't know it, and don't want to know how bankrupt they are, for this is offensive to our human PRIDE — the very thing which our Lord is dealing with when HE is taking us into this FIRST STEP to THE REALLY BLESSED LIFE. These kinds of people are GOD'S IDEAL PEOPLE!

QUESTION: Have you ever heard an in-depth Bible Study or a good sermon on the subject: “WHO DOES GOD CHOOSE”?

ANSWER: The TEXT is in **1 Corinthians 1:26-31**:

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called:

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty;

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:

29 That no flesh should glory in His Presence.

30 But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, Who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

NOTE: Please take a good look at **verse 26** and start thanking The Lord for that little dinky letter “M”. ***For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called.***

It does not say “ANY” wise, or *not any* mighty, or *not any* noble are called. That would really devastate the high and the mighty. God does choose SOME BIG MUKKEDY MUCKS, some of the elite, but NOT MANY. HIS main choice is as follows;

WHO GOD CHOOSES MOST and USES MOST

- The Lord chooses THE “FOOLISH” THINGS of the world to confound the wise.
- The Lord chooses the “WEAK” THINGS of the world to confound the things that are Mighty.
- The Lord chooses THE “BASE” things of the world.
- The Lord chooses THE THINGS DESPISED.

- **The Lord finally chooses (WHAT?) the things that are NOT, to bring to nought the things that are. (HOW COME?)**

ANSWER: That no flesh should glory in HIS Presence.

QUESTION: WHAT? God chooses THE FOOLISH, THE WEAK, THE BASE, THE DESPISED, and the things which are not to bring to nought (NOTHING) the things that are?

WHY??? So that NO FLESH should GLORY in HIS Presence. (See **I Corinthians 1:26-29**, the previous scripture)

QUESTION: Do you know that these verses upset the WISE, the STRONG, and the high and mighty in their own eyes?

ANSWER: I've heard some respond like this: "OH NO!!! GOD!!! Surely NOT THEM"!

ILLUSTRATION:

I Samuel 15:17: Samuel said to King Saul: When thou wast "LITTLE" in thine own sight, wast thou not made HEAD of the tribes of Israel, And THE LORD ANOINTED thee king over Israel?

Sadly enough, Saul didn't stay LITTLE very long.

That is what being "POOR IN SPIRIT" really is — being so little in our own eyes that God could poke us through a knothole and we wouldn't touch.

HOWEVER: When king Saul got the BIG HEAD, all puffed up with PRIDE, then he was deposed from his kingly throne. God replaced him by taking a shepherd lad by the name of David to take his place. One day when the LADIES WERE SINGING: "**Saul hath slain this thousands, and David his ten thousands**" (**1 Samuel 18:7**), ENVY rose in king Saul's heart, and he plotted to kill God's anointed and newly-appointed king over Israel. Instead of him succeeding after numerous attempts, he finally lost his life in battle with the Philistines.

WHO GOD CHOOSES and USES — GOD' S STRANGE CHOICES

QUESTION: Do you think you will qualify? Do you fit in any of these five areas?

- 1. The FOOLISH THINGS**
- 2. THE WEAK THINGS**

3. THE BASE THINGS
4. THE DESPISED
5. THE NOTHINGS

A BRIEF EXPLANATION OR INTERPRETATION OF EACH OF THESE "STRANGE CHOICES" WHICH GOD MAKES:

Each one is either directly or indirectly related to BEING POOR IN SPIRIT.

1. **The ROD of GOD** in the hand of the Prophet MOSES, the MAN of GOD.

Deuteronomy 33:1: And this is the blessing, wherewith Moses the man of God blessed the children of Israel before his death.

Joshua 14:6: Then the children of Judah came unto Joshua in Gilgal: and Caleb the son of Jephunneh the Kenezite said unto him, Thou knowest the thing that the LORD said unto Moses the man of God concerning me and thee in Kadeshbarnea.

QUESTION: Why did The Lord God choose MOSES to lead the Jewish nation out of Egypt's bondage to the PROMISED LAND?

ANSWER: Because:

- (a) Moses was poor in spirit.

Matthew 5:3: Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

- (b) Moses was little in his own eyes.

1 Samuel 15:17: And Samuel said, When thou wast little in thine own sight, wast thou not made the head of the tribes of Israel, and the LORD anointed thee king over Israel?

The Lord appeared unto the shepherd Moses at the Burning Bush saying unto him: **"MOSES, MOSES" (Exodus 3:4)**. Moses responds saying: **"Here am I."** After the Lord instructed Moses to take off his shoes because the ground whereon he was standing was HOLY GROUND, then The Lord said in **Exodus 3:5**:

And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground.

That is what it means to be POOR IN SPIRIT. Moses feels like a SPECK of NOTHING as they'd say down in Arkansas, that he was not worth the salt in his bread.

Moses feels so inadequate to do this GIGANTIC TASK and tries to beg off from doing what God is commissioning him to do. This is what he said next: ***O my LORD, I'm not eloquent, neither before nor since Thou hast talked to Thy servant. Exodus 4:10***

NOTE: Thy "SERVANT". That is an earmark of HUMILITY which God saw in him that qualifies him to do this HUGE TASK. Moses brags on his brother, Aaron, telling The Lord that he is ELOQUENT and could do the job best. The Lord said I know it, but he doesn't have IT.

God is not looking for ELOQUENCE but OBEDIENCE. Listen to Paul speaking in ***1 Corinthians 2:1-5:***

- 1 And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.***
- 2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified.***
- 3 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.***
- 4 And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power:***
- 5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.***

In **Jeremiah 9:23-24** GOD SAID:

- 23 Let not the wise man glory in his WISDOM, neither let the MIGHTY MAN glory in his MIGHT, let not the RICH man glory in his RICHES.***
- 24 But let him that glorieth, glory in this, that he understandeth and KNOWETH ME, that I AM THE LORD.***

Question: Do you recall our calling MOSES 'THE MAN of GOD with THE ROD OF GOD'?

Now take a look at: **Exodus 4:20-21:**

- 20 And Moses took his wife and his sons, and set them upon an ass, and he returned to the land of Egypt: and Moses took the rod of God in his hand.***
- 21 And the LORD said unto Moses, When thou goest to return into Egypt, see that thou do all those wonders (Miracles) before Pharaoh, which I have put in thine hand: but I will harden his heart, that he shall not let the people go.***

Moses was skittish and reluctant to return to Egypt because Pharaoh threatened to KILL him if he ever saw his face again. So recorded in **Exodus 4:19** is The LORD's assurance to Moses that: ***ALL THOSE ARE DEAD WHO SOUGHT THY LIFE.***

Now put yourself in MOSES' shoes. Going to the ruler of Egypt which was a great nation at that time with NO ARMY, NO MILITARY HARDWARE, and only THE ROD OF GOD in his hand. This is only a round stick of wood, likely about three to four feet long. WITH THIS ROD OF GOD in his hand, Moses tells Pharaoh he is going to deliver Israel out of the hands of Pharaoh, his chief officers, and all the people of Egypt. Pharaoh must have burst out in a HEARTY LAUGHTER. (If you have seen the movie *THE TEN COMMANDMENTS*, you'll recall Pharaoh's reactions and making light of what Moses had just said.)

GOD USES THE FOOLISH THINGS to confound the wise and educated:

1 Corinthians 1:27: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty.

HOWEVER, that ROD in the hand of the MAN OF GOD wrought MANY MIGHTY MIRACLES before Pharaoh and his lords until they pleaded with Pharaoh to let THE PEOPLE GO, for we will all be dead men if you don't.



Those MIRACLES were directed at each of the TEN MAIN DEITIES of the Egyptians who were powerless to stop them from happening.

Finally, Pharaoh is persuaded to release these Israelite servants and slaves who had served him and his nation for free for over 430 years. They leave rejoicing and with GREAT SUBSTANCE, for the Egyptians gave them much silver, gold, apparel, precious jewels, and too much more to mention. All this was merely PAYDAY for 430 years of labor without wages, labor-free gratis. The Scriptures prophesied:

- ***Genesis 15:14: And also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance.***
- ***Exodus 3:20-22:***
 - 20 And I will stretch out my hand, and smite Egypt with all my wonders which I will do in the midst thereof: and after that he will let you go.***
 - 21 And I will give this people favour in the sight of the Egyptians: and it shall come to pass, that, when ye go, ye shall not go empty:***

22 But every woman shall borrow of her neighbour, and of her that sojourneth in her house, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment: and ye shall put them upon your sons, and upon your daughters; and ye shall spoil the Egyptians.

- **Psalm 105:37: He brought them forth also with silver and gold: and there was not one feeble person among their tribes.**

THAT IS NOT ALL. There is much more to take place with THE ROD OF GOD in the hands of the MAN OF GOD. There was the miraculous opening of the Red Sea and Israel's passage through it on DRY GROUND. The waters stood up as a WALL for ISRAEL. After they all crossed on over, Moses pointed THE ROD OF GOD at the WALL OF WATER, causing it to collapse. It drowned the entire Egyptian army which was in pursuit of the children of Israel to force their return to the land of Bondage.

GOD USES THE FOOLISH THINGS to confound the WISE and SMART HEADS. WHY? So that NO FLESH could take any of the GLORY which alone belongs TO THE LORD GOD ALMIGHTY.

MORE FOOLISH THINGS GOD USES:

1. GOD'S GREAT ARMY

QUESTION: Have you ever heard about it? Do you know? Read **Joel 2:25:**

And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, my great army which I sent among you.

What or who is GOD'S GREAT ARMY? Don't laugh for it is LOCUSTS, CATERPILLARS, PALMERWORMS, and CANKERWORMS.

2. MORE FOOLISH THINGS GOD USES: a **DONKEY** to preach a sermon to a backslidden preacher as recorded in **Numbers 22:21-30:**

21 And Balaam rose up in the morning, and saddled his ass, and went with the princes of Moab.

22 And God's anger was kindled because he went: and the angel of the LORD stood in the way for an adversary against him. Now he was riding upon his ass, and his two servants were with him.

23 And the ass saw the angel of the LORD standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass, to turn her into the way.

24 But the angel of the LORD stood in a path of the vineyards, a wall being on this side, and a wall on that side.
25 And when the ass saw the angel of the LORD, she thrust herself unto the wall, and crushed Balaam's foot against the wall: and he smote her again.
26 And the angel of the LORD went further, and stood in a narrow place, where was no way to turn either to the right hand or to the left.
27 And when the ass saw the angel of the LORD, she fell down under Balaam: and Balaam's anger was kindled, and he smote the ass with a staff.
28 And the LORD opened the mouth of the ass, and she said unto Balaam, What have I done unto thee, that thou hast smitten me these three times?
29 And Balaam said unto the ass, Because thou hast mocked me: I would there were a sword in mine hand, for now would I kill thee.
30 And the ass said unto Balaam, Am not I thine ass, upon which thou hast ridden ever since I was thine unto this day? was I ever wont to do so unto thee? And he said, Nay.

God had used that donkey to protect Balaam!

3. **A LITTLE DINKY STONE** in the sling of David to conquer a Giant Goliath.

1 Samuel 17:49: And David put his hand in his bag, and took thence a stone, and slang it, and smote the Philistine in his forehead, that the stone sunk into his forehead; and he fell upon his face to the earth.

4. **A ROOSTER** to convict a backslidden apostle by the name of Simon Peter.

Matthew 26:34-35:

34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee.

5. **EMPTY PITCHERS, CANDLES, A RAM'S HORN** in the hands of Gideon's army to defeat the Midianites.

Judges 7:16: And he divided the three hundred men into three companies, and he put a trumpet in every man's hand, with empty pitchers, and lamps within the pitchers.

QUESTION: WHAT ELSE DOES GOD USE?

ANSWER: THE **WEAK THINGS**, like:

1. Jeremiah, when only a **CHILD**, to preach to the whole nation of Israel. Now listen:
Jeremiah 1:4-5:

4 Then the WORD of THE LORD came unto me (i.e. Jeremiah) saying:

5 Before I formed thee in the womb I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb, I SANCTIFIED thee, and I ORDAINED thee a PROPHET unto the NATIONS.

Now listen carefully to Jeremiah who is POOR IN SPIRIT, little in his own eyes, and feels so inadequate, saying to God in **Jeremiah 1:6:**

AH, LORD GOD!!! Behold, I cannot speak, for I AM A CHILD. (As though the Lord did not know that!)

Listen to the LORD'S response in **Jeremiah 1:7-8:**

7 Say not, I am a child; for thou shalt go to all that I shall send thee, and whatsoever I command thee, thou shalt speak.

8 BE NOT AFRAID of their faces, for I AM WITH THEE.

2. **A LITTLE LADY** named Jael conquers a five-star General of Jabin's Canaanite army.

Judges 4:18-23:

18 And Jael went out to meet Sisera, and said unto him, Turn in, my lord, turn in to me; fear not. And when he had turned in unto her into the tent, she covered him with a mantle.

19 And he said unto her, Give me, I pray thee, a little water to drink; for I am thirsty. And she opened a bottle of milk, and gave him drink, and covered him.

20 Again he said unto her, Stand in the door of the tent, and it shall be, when any man doth come and enquire of thee, and say, Is there any man here? that thou shalt say, No.

21 Then Jael Heber's wife took a nail of the tent, and took an hammer in her hand, and went softly unto him, and smote the nail into his temples, and fastened it into the ground: for he was fast asleep and weary. So he died.

22 And, behold, as Barak pursued Sisera, Jael came out to meet him, and said unto him, Come, and I will shew thee the man whom thou seekest. And when he came into her tent, behold, Sisera lay dead, and the nail was in his temples.

23 So God subdued on that day Jabin the king of Canaan before the children of Israel.

2. **GOD USES THE WEAK**

In **2 Corinthians 12:9** God said:

My grace is sufficient for thee: for MY STRENGTH is made PERFECT in WEAKNESS.

Listen now to the apostle Paul speaking in **2 Corinthians 12:10**: ***When I am weak, then am I strong.***

There is a POWERFUL SPIRITUAL LESSON to be learned right here. When we feel SELF-CONFIDENT and capable and able to do things for GOD on our own, we will depend more on ourselves than on The LORD. Even though HE told us in **Proverbs 3:5-6** to:

- (a) ***TRUST in THE LORD with "ALL" thine heart; and***
- (b) ***LEAN NOT to thine own understanding;***
- (c) ***In "ALL" thy ways ACKNOWLEDGE HIM, and He shall direct thy paths.***

The POOR in SPIRIT will say: "Amen, LORD, You told it right. I found out the hard way that I can't lean on my own understanding, for it is so limited and inadequate. I will TRUST THEE with "ALL" my heart. I will acknowledge THEE in "ALL" my ways, and rely on THEE to direct my paths."

QUESTION: What else does GOD USE?

ANSWER: ***1 Corinthians 1:28: And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are.***

He uses **THE BASE THINGS** of the world.

1. LIKE HORNETS

(a) ***Exodus 23:28-30:***

28 And I will send hornets before thee, which shall drive out the Hivite, the Canaanite, and the Hittite, from before thee.

29 I will not drive them out from before thee in one year; lest the land become desolate, and the beast of the field multiply against thee.

30 By little and little I will drive them out from before thee, until thou be increased, and inherit the land.

(b) ***Deuteronomy 7:20: Moreover the LORD thy God will send the hornet among them, until they that are left, and hide themselves from thee, be destroyed.***

QUESTION: Can you imagine HORNETS on a SEARCH and SEEK mission, hunting for adversaries of Israel who are hidden away in secret places? GOD DID EXACTLY AS HE SAID HE WOULD DO. Turn to **Joshua 24:12**:

I sent the HORNET before you, which drove them out from before you, even the two kings of the Amorites, but not with thy sword, nor with thy bow.

God can GUIDE HORNETS just like HE sent the STAR to guide the wise men in search for the little BABE in THE MANGER, THE LORD JESUS. **Matthew 2:2-10**:

2 *Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.*

3 *When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.*

4 *And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.*

5 *And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet,*

6 *And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.*

7 *Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.*

8 *And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.*

9 *When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.*

10 *When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.*

2. QUESTION: What else does God use that is **BASE** in nature?

ANSWER: **A WORM!!!**

QUESTION: WHAT???? A "WORM"?!?! Yes, that's right.

Now if you are POOR in SPIRIT as our text gives as the qualifying characteristic to be BLESSED and to inherit THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN, you will appreciate **Isaiah 41:14**. If there is any PRIDE still resident on the inside, this may curdle your blood. We just thought it appropriate to prepare us all for what is now to come. THE LORD GOD IS SPEAKING to JACOB and the CHILDREN OF ISRAEL saying:

Isaiah 41:14-16:

14 Fear not, thou WORM JACOB , and ye men of Israel; I will help thee, saith the LORD, and thy REDEEMER, THE HOLY ONE of ISRAEL.

15 Behold, I will make thee a new sharp threshing instrument having teeth: thou SHALT THRESH THE MOUNTAINS, AND BEAT THEM SMALL, and shalt make the HILLS as CHAFF.

16 Thou shalt FAN THEM, and the wind shall carry them away, and the whirlwind shall scatter them: and THOU SHALT REJOICE IN THE LORD, and SHALT GLORY IN THE HOLY ONE OF ISRAEL.

QUESTION: Did the Almighty actually call JACOB and his descendants a "WORM"?

ANSWER: If anyone of us is very PROUD, this Scripture would curdle our blood if the same word were directed at us. If we're "POOR IN SPIRIT", these words will not tee us off or get under our skin.

Before getting all "strung out or HUNG UP" on this verse, let us get the closer look at the WHOLE PANORAMA and see into the background of this Scripture: Jacob is returning home from Pa-dam-a-ram where he has lived for over 20 years. The Lord told him to return to his home and to go up to Bethel where the Lord appeared unto him as recorded in **Genesis 28:19 and 35:1**:

Genesis 28:19: And he called the name of that place Bethel: but the name of that city was called Luz at the first.

Genesis 35:1: And God said unto Jacob, Arise, go up to Bethel, and dwell there: and make there an altar unto God, that appeared unto thee when thou fleddest from the face of Esau thy brother.

Jacob and his whole family left the place of his father-in-law, Laban, secretly and began his journey home. On the way, he gets some very distressing news that Esau and 400 men are headed his way to meet him (**Genesis 32:6**).

Genesis 32:6: And the messengers returned to Jacob, saying, We came to thy brother Esau, and also he cometh to meet thee, and four hundred men with him.

He is scarred skinny and, bless his heart, he slips away at night from his sleeping family and goes out to SEEK THE LORD in earnest prayer! Listen now to what he is saying:

Genesis 32:9-10:

9 And Jacob said, O God of my father Abraham, and God of my father Isaac, the LORD which saidst unto me, Return unto thy country, and to thy kindred, and I will deal well with thee:

10 I AM NOT WORTHY OF THE LEAST OF ALL THE MERCIES, and of all the truth, which thou hast shewed unto THY SERVANT; for with my staff I passed over this Jordan; and now I am become two bands.

Genesis 28:19: And he called the name of that place Bethel: but the name of that city was called Luz at the first.

Genesis 32:6: And the messengers returned to Jacob, saying, We came to thy brother Esau, and also he cometh to meet thee, and four hundred men with him.

Genesis 35:1: And God said unto Jacob, Arise, go up to Bethel, and dwell there: and make there an altar unto God, that appeared unto thee when thou fleddest from the face of Esau thy brother.

QUESTION: Do you feel the "BLESSED ARE THE POOR IN SPIRIT" ATTITUDE proceeding from the heart of this prophet of The Lord?

ANSWER: **Out of the abundance of the HEART, the mouth speaketh.** Jesus said so in **Matthew 12:34.**

Jacob feels like a SPECK OF NOTHING, that he is only knee-high to a grasshopper. He is little in his own eyes. And for God to call him a WORM is no insult!!! For he can easily relate to that term. He feels lower than a snake's belly, and his heart says: Amen LORD, you are telling it just like it is. I'm NOT WORTHY of the "LEAST" of Thy mercies. (I know I'm just a little wee worm, but Lord, You can use WORMS!) If PRIDE were mountain high in Jacob's heart, he would have been madder than a 'WET HEN'. All his FEATHERS would have been all bristled up. But let us now get to the REST OF THE STORY.

GOD and A WORM COMBINATION

Almighty GOD links HIMSELF up with a WORM — JACOB — thus making a remarkable combination. Almighty God is not embarrassed to UNITE HIMSELF to a WORM - JACOB. The rest of the text then carefully studied should make THE OLD FASHIONED SHOUTING METHODISTS have a GOOD HAPPY SHOUTING SPELL. NOW take a good look at what GOD and a WORM can do, and did do. This WORM JACOB is going to THRESH THE MOUNTAINS. (Did you see that little dinky letter "s" tacked on to MOUNTAIN?)

QUESTION: WHAT!!!! A WORM THRESHING MOUNTAINS and beating them small???? That is impossible, INCREDIBLE, and even RIDICULOUS!!!

ANSWER: Yes it is if it's only a worm trying to do it all alone by itself. But when HOOKED UP TO DEITY, in glorious combination, not only are those big problems resolved and made to disappear (for the wind shall carry the dust of the mountains away after the WORM has threshed them and beat them small).

On top of all that, in **Isaiah 41:16** it says: ***Thou shalt REJOICE IN THE LORD, and GLORY in THE HOLY ONE OF ISRAEL.*** This is where the shouting comes in.

QUESTION: What???? WORMS SHOUTING??? Never heard of such a thing!

ANSWER: Well, now you are hearing it. And remember, these are GOD'S WORMS, WORMS UNITED TO, and HOOKED UP TO, GOD in a glorious and remarkable UNION. GOD USES THE BASE THINGS.

The Prophet Jonah will give us our concluding example and illustration of this truth. He was a GREAT PREACHER EVANGELIST, a powerful soul winner. The Lord Jesus makes reference to him, and added in **Matthew 12:41: *Behold, a GREATER than Jonas is here.***

The implication is that Jonah was a mighty man of God. However, the BIG MAN IN GOD became a little man, for he got puffed up with pride. He wanted to do his own thing. He disobeyed ORDERS FROM HEADQUARTERS.

The Lord told him to go to Nineveh, that wicked city, and PREACH up a storm. He went the very opposite direction, paid his fare, got into a ship, and went down to the bottom of the ship and went to sleep. A violent storm arose because of his rebellion, and a search was ordered by the Captain to find out who the rascal was that was causing them their safety and loss of cargo, for they had to pitch a lot overboard. Jonah is discovered, makes his sad confession, and tells them there can be no quieting of the storm until the sailors pitch him overboard into the stormy sea. They were reluctant, but finally did, and the sea became calm.

Jonah first went down to the sea, then down into the ship. Then he went down to the bottom of it. Now, The Lord is taking him still further down — down to the bottom of the sea in the belly of a whale. Now, please look with me at **Jonah 2:5**. Jonah is crying and pouring out his heart unto the Lord in prayer. He said: ***The waters compassed me about, even to the soul; THE "WEEDS" were wrapped about my head.***

QUESTION: Did you take notice of this ever before?

ANSWER: Jonah got the BIG HEAD, and God put a POULTICE (defined by Webster's Dictionary as "a soft, moist, hot mass of FLOUR, MEAL, BRAN, FLAXSEED applied to sores or inflamed parts to take the swelling down.")

GOD'S poultice was much different, however. It was slick and slimy seaweeds wrapped "WHERE"?

ANSWER: About HIS HEAD, is what Jonah said.

God knows exactly where the TROUBLE AREA is, and measures out the TREATMENT accordingly. That is what we mean by GOD USING THE BASE THINGS and THE DESPISED to bring to NOUGHT or "NOTHING" the things that are, that no flesh should glory in His Presence.

Just one more thing GOD USES: **THE THINGS THAT ARE "NOT"** to bring to NAUGHT the things that are, that no flesh should glory in His Presence.

QUESTION: What's that?

ANSWER:

(a) God uses **EMPTY DITCHES** to defeat the armies of the Edomites and Moabites as recorded in **2 Kings 3:16-24:**

16 And he said, Thus saith the LORD, Make this valley full of ditches.

17 For thus saith the LORD, Ye shall not see wind, neither shall ye see rain; yet that valley shall be filled with water, that ye may drink, both ye, and your cattle, and your beasts.

18 And this is but a light thing in the sight of the LORD: he will deliver the Moabites also into your hand.

19 And ye shall smite every fenced city, and every choice city, and shall fell every good tree, and stop all wells of water, and mar every good piece of land with stones.

20 And it came to pass in the morning, when the meat offering was offered, that, behold, there came water by the way of Edom, and the country was filled with water.

21 And when all the Moabites heard that the kings were come up to fight against them, they gathered all that were able to put on armour, and upward, and stood in the border.

22 And they rose up early in the morning, and the sun shone upon the water, and the Moabites saw the water on the other side as red as blood:

23 And they said, This is blood: the kings are surely slain, and they have smitten one another: now therefore, Moab, to the spoil.

24 And when they came to the camp of Israel, the Israelites rose up and smote the Moabites, so that they fled before them: but they went forward smiting the Moabites, even in their country.

(b) When Samson killed the lion, the Scripture says: **He had “NOTHING” in his hand.**

Judges 14:6: And the Spirit of the LORD came mightily upon him, and he rent him as he would have rent a kid, and he had nothing in his hand: but he told not his father or his mother what he had done.

So God used NOTHING to accomplish SOMETHING.

(c) The Philistines are celebrating a great victory over the Jewish nation which had been living in sin, and the Presence of God had lifted from them. They are not defenseless against their enemies. They were trying to trust in the ARK of GOD'S Presence to help them, but the GOD OF THE ARK was not there. That is all that MATTERS, because without HIM we can do NOTHING. The Ark was taken and placed in the temple of the Philistines' sacred little old dinky god, Dagon. He was a big fat idol, and the next morning he was fallen flat on his cold stony face to the ground.

QUESTION: Who or what did that? How did that happen?

ANSWER: **The INVISIBLE Presence AND POWER OF GOD ALMIGHTY.**

The Philistines worked very hard to get their dumb IDOL back upright the next morning. Then that night the very same thing happens again, only this time THE POWER OF GOD SLAMS that dumb idol down and breaks off its HEAD and arms. So the Philistines got rid of that ARK OF GOD in a hurry. They carried it to each of their large cities, and in each place a MYSTERIOUS PHYSICAL TROUBLE struck the people.

Finally, they made a cart and put the ARK on it, and selected and put MOTHER COWS who were nursing their calves onto the front of the cart. If those mothers were to leave their BABIES behind and go towards the land of Israel bellowing and BAWLING as they go, then this has to be the INVISIBLE HAND OF GOD doing all this. It happened just that way. See **I Samuel 5:1-12** for the first part of this account. The last half is recorded in **chapter 6**.

1 Samuel 5:1-12:

1 And the Philistines took the ark of God, and brought it from Ebenezer unto Ashdod.

2 When the Philistines took the ark of God, they brought it into the house of Dagon, and set it by Dagon.

3 And when they of Ashdod arose early on the morrow, behold, Dagon was fallen upon his face to the earth before the ark of the LORD. And they took Dagon, and set him in his place again.

4 And when they arose early on the morrow morning, behold, Dagon was fallen upon his face to the ground before the ark of the LORD; and the head of Dagon and both the palms of his hands were cut off upon the threshold; only the stump of Dagon was left to him.

5 Therefore neither the priests of Dagon, nor any that come into Dagon's house, tread on the threshold of Dagon in Ashdod unto this day.

6 But the hand of the LORD was heavy upon them of Ashdod, and he destroyed them, and smote them with emerods, even Ashdod and the coasts thereof.

7 And when the men of Ashdod saw that it was so, they said, The ark of the God of Israel shall not abide with us: for his hand is sore upon us, and upon Dagon our god.

8 They sent therefore and gathered all the lords of the Philistines unto them, and said, What shall we do with the ark of the God of Israel? And they answered, Let the ark of the God of Israel be carried about unto Gath. And they carried the ark of the God of Israel about thither.

9 And it was so, that, after they had carried it about, the hand of the LORD was against the city with a very great destruction: and he smote the men of the city, both small and great, and they had emerods in their secret parts.

10 Therefore they sent the ark of God to Ekron. And it came to pass, as the ark of God came to Ekron, that the Ekronites cried out, saying, They have brought about the ark of the God of Israel to us, to slay us and our people.

11 So they sent and gathered together all the lords of the Philistines, and said, Send away the ark of the God of Israel, and let it go again to his own place, that it slay us not, and our people: for there was a deadly destruction throughout all the city; the hand of God was very heavy there.

12 And the men that died not were smitten with the emerods: and the cry of the city went up to heaven.

(d) Then God uses **WIND**, directing it on special missions to DO HIS WILL and to accomplish His purposes as seen in **Exodus 14:21**:

Exodus 14:21: And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the LORD caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind all that night, and made the sea dry land, and the waters were divided.

He also used WIND in the Mulberry trees to guide and direct King David as seen in **2 Samuel 5:23-24** and **I Chronicles 15:14-15**:

2 Samuel 5:23-24:

23 And when David enquired of the LORD, he said, Thou shalt not go up; but fetch a compass behind them, and come upon them over against the mulberry trees.

24 And let it be, when thou hearest the sound of a going in the tops of the mulberry trees, that then thou shalt bestir thyself: for then shall the LORD go out before thee, to smite the host of the Philistines.

1 Chronicles 15:14-15:

14 So the priests and the Levites sanctified themselves to bring up the ark of the LORD God of Israel.

15 And the children of the Levites bare the ark of God upon their shoulders with the staves thereon, as Moses commanded according to the word of the LORD.

GOD can produce **WIND INSIDE A HOUSE** as on the Day of Pentecost as recorded in **Acts 2:2**:

And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

Read also **Ezekiel 37:9** where **FOUR WINDS** are at work for God:

Ezekiel 37:9: Then said he unto me, Prophecy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live.

See also the **FOUR WINDS** in **Revelation 7:1**; **Daniel 7:1-2**, **8:8,11:4**, and **Zechariah 2:6**:

Revelation 7:1: And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

Daniel 7:1-2:

1 In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote the dream, and told the sum of the matters.

2 Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea.

Daniel 8:8: Therefore the he goat waxed very great: and when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven.

Daniel 11:4: And when he shall stand up, his kingdom shall be broken, and shall be divided toward the four winds of heaven; and not to his posterity, nor according to his dominion which he ruled: for his kingdom shall be plucked up, even for others beside those.

Zechariah 2:6: Ho, ho, come forth, and flee from the land of the north, saith the LORD: for I have spread you abroad as the four winds of the heaven, saith the LORD.

(c) You or I would have a difficult time trying to hang a hat or coat on a TOOTHPICK, but GOD can HANG THE EARTH on NOTHING, as heavy as it is, as described in **Job 26:7:**

He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing.

BLESSED ARE THE POOR IN SPIRIT, FOR THEIRS IS THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

QUESTION: Did you observe that little bitsy two letter word: "IS" (present tense)?

ANSWER: Our MASTER and LORD did not say that one day you will be rewarded by entering with flying colors into the KINGDOM OF HEAVEN. HE said:

For yours "IS" (and that means RIGHT NOW!!!!) THE KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

Right here on the earth we can be reigning as KINGS and QUEENS with JESUS, even before "THY KINGDOM COME", as our Lord taught us to pray in **Matthew 6:10** and **13:**

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

The apostle Paul, in his letter to the Church at Corinth, said this:

1 Corinthians 4:9-10:

9 For I think that God hath set forth us THE APOSTLES LAST, as it were appointed unto death; for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10 We are FOOLS for CHRIST'S SAKE, but ye are wise in CHRIST; we are WEAK, but ye are strong; ye are honorable, but we are despised.

(Note: We did not elaborate on this word "DESPISED" when expounding on GOD'S STRANGE CHOICE in **I Corinthians 1:28**):

1 Corinthians 1:28: And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are.

But here we will only say that THESE DESPISED are amongst GOD'S SPECIAL CHOSEN ONES. I'll not finish out the chapter, but leave that up to you to do. It is recorded in **I Corinthians 4:8-21** and is quite a heavy chapter.

SUMMARY:

We're KINGDOM PEOPLE and are admonished in **Matthew 6:33** to: ***SEEK YE FIRST THE KINGDOM of GOD and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.***

The KINGDOM first starts IN OUR HEARTS, as The Lord Jesus said in **Luke 17:21**:

Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

When The Lord Jesus is TRULY REIGNING on the throne of our hearts, we're then reigning along with HIM.

We have shared with you **Matthew 6:33** where that KEY WORD "FIRST" is recorded:

Matthew 6:33: But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

Now we will turn to **Luke 12:31-32** and **Revelation 20:6** where our BLESSED LORD will share with us THE FUTURE KINGDOM on this earth when we will reign with HIM for 1,000 years.

Luke 12:31-32:

31 But rather seek ye THE KINGDOM OF GOD; and all these things shall be added unto you.

32 FEAR NOT, little flock; for it is your FATHER'S good pleasure to GIVE YOU THE KINGDOM.

Revelation 20:6: Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

We can't loose for winning!!! HALLELUJAH!!!

CLASS HOMEWORK: The Beatitudes
LESSON ONE: LIVING THE BLESSED LIFE

1. Write out the complete definition of the word "BLESSED" from the study guide.
2. The nine beatitudes are nine stair steps to _____ or _____
_____ or _____ to the blessed life.
3. Nine is the number of human _____, or _____, or _____
and _____.
4. Who should be the happiest people on earth?
5. Many people believe that Jesus could do the things He did because He was the Son of God, and that we cannot do these things. What was Jesus' answer in John 5:19, John 5:30, and John 8:23?
6. Jesus was dependent upon the Father, as we have seen, for all things. Who are we dependent upon in order to go into the Presence of the Father, and in whose name can we ask anything?
7. Who does God choose?
8. What are the five areas of God's strange choices?
9. What was Moses' response to God when He told Moses He would send him to Pharaoh, that he mayest bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt?
10. What small (foolish) instrument did God use via Moses against the mighty Pharaoh?
11. Describe what God used the hornets to do for Him in Exodus 23:28-30 in your own words.
12. What was Jacob's attitude in His prayer to God concerning the approaching 400 men led by his brother Esau in Genesis 32:9-10?
13. Samson had "nothing" in his hand when he killed the lion. How was he able to do it?
14. What did God use the four winds in Ezekiel 37:9 to do?
15. The Lord Jesus promised: Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Why is the "IS" so important in this phrase?
16. Has the Lord spoken something special to your heart regarding this lesson as you studied?

LESSON: #2
THE “SECRET” TO LIVING THE “BLESSED LIFE”

TEXT: *Matthew 5:4: BLESSED (i.e., HAPPY) are they that “MOURN”, for they shall be COMFORTED.*

CONTEXT:

- *Luke 6:2: BLESSED are ye that WEEP now: for ye shall LAUGH.*
- *Isaiah 61:2-3:*
2 To proclaim the acceptable year of The Lord, and the Day of vengeance of our God; to COMFORT ALL that MOURN.
3 To appoint unto them that MOURN in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of JOY for MOURNING, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called TREES of RIGHTEOUSNESS, the planting of The Lord, that HE might be GLORIFIED.

INTRODUCTION: Taking a hurried glimpse at this BE-ATTITUDE in **Luke 6:2**, it looks more like HAPPINESS in REVERSE. The Lord Jesus did start out the verse with “BLESSED” which does mean HAPPINESS in the noblest form, and HAPPINESS in the highest degree.

QUESTION: So, the BIG QUESTION is: How can HAPPINESS come out of SADNESS or MOURNING?

ANSWER:

(a) The two context Scriptures above shed some light on this question.

- i. The precious promise of COMFORT for “ALL” who mourn is good news.
- ii. To give JOY for mourning is even much MORE GOOD NEWS.
- iii. Then, the garment of PRAISE for the SPIRIT OF HEAVINESS (heaviness of heart feeds MOURNING and deepens it), but to see this JOY to replace mourning is the BEST news.

(b) However, these precious promises — wonderful though they are because they do shed three rays of light and hope for those who mourn — still do not direct us to the “WHY” or the “CAUSE” for this MOURNING. Our primary purpose, therefore, is to expound on this passage of Scripture.

OUTLINE:

I. THE CAUSE or CAUSES FOR THIS MOURNING

- II. THE CROSS-REFERENCES in THE BIBLE on MOURNING
- III. THE CONSEQUENCES of this kind of MOURNING
- IV. THE COMFORTS (marvelous results) obtained from this kind of MOURNING

There are basically three main causes for MOURNING. The FIRST ONE will be:

- I. THE MAIN CAUSE (or CAUSES) for this kind of MOURNING

QUESTION: What is this MOURNING over? What is it all about?

ANSWER:

- (a) **MOURNING due to SPIRITUAL POVERTY** (poor in spirit) relates to **Matthew 5:3**.

This Kind of MOURNING comes from a Divine Revelation to our hearts on how poor we are spiritually when we should, instead, be rich in The Lord:

- Rich in FAITH, in LOVE, in HOLINESS, in GRACE, and in HOLY GHOST POWER
- Rich in the Fruits of THE Spirit
- Rich in Holy Spirit GIFTS
- Rich in the Fruits of Righteousness
- Rich in souls won to Christ

The POORER we are — the LEANER we are in our soul — the more we will MOURN over our undone condition. Christians who are spiritually in a measure of victory over SELF and SIN are very conscientious towards The LORD. We desire to be at our VERY BEST and living up to The Lord's highest expectations of us.

We want to be VICTORIOUS and OVERCOMERS. However, if we have more DOWNS than UPS, and more POUTS than SHOUTS, this brings us to the DEEPER DEGREES of MOURNING over our shortcomings.

We desire to be a TRIBUTE to the CAUSE OF CHRIST and not a STUMBLING BLOCK. We want to be an ASSET and not a LIABILITY. We want to turn people TO CHRIST and not AWAY from HIM. But when we see how ineffective we are and how powerless we are, and how we bring discredit to the cause of Christ, this, in turn, MAKES OUR HEARTS TO GO INTO DEEPER MOURNING and even into ANGUISH.

(b) **MOURNING** due to the **CONSEQUENCES** of sinning and Holy Ghost Conviction that brings Godly sorrow for sins committed.

When The Lord said in **John 5:14: *GO thy way and SIN NO MORE*** . . . and we find ourselves disobeying HIS WORD, we will grieve over this and go into MOURNING.

Also, in **John 8:11: *Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.***

John 5:13-14:

13 *And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place.*

14 *Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.*

If, on the other hand, we're Carnal Christians, worldly minded, petting the flesh, and allowing the "OLD MAN" to still ride in the saddle, then we'll excuse sin, condone it, and even justify sinning.

What does the Word say about the "old man"?

- ***Romans 6:6: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.***
- ***Ephesians 4:22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts.***
- ***Colossians 3:9: Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds.***

An HONEST CHRISTIAN, in studying each of these portions of Scripture, will discover that:

- We are supposed to be FREE FROM SIN.
- We are supposed to be SET FREE FROM SIN.
- Sin is NOT to have dominion over us.

Let's then review the meaning of sin, transgression, and iniquity.

Sin:

Romans 3:23: *For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.*

The English word for “sin” comes from archery. The archer would draw the bow and send the arrow toward the target. If he missed the mark, the overseeing official would yell “sin”.

Definition of sin in Hebrew: *slipping away from where you should be; erring from the path on which God has put you; not achieving a standard that God has set; missing the road or the mark or the path.*

Definition of sin in Greek: *a missing of the mark; an act of disobedience to the divine Lord.*

Sin is not too deep-seated if it is not linked with iniquity. Sin is more on top of the skin. You can put a bandaid on it, or you can just put some antiseptic on it so the wound heals naturally unless infection gets in.

Transgression:

Ephesians 2:1: And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.

Hebrew: *a willful deviation from, and therefore rebellion against, the path of godly living.*

Greek: *to go beyond; overstepping the limits.*

This is very much linked with rebellion and violation, the two key characteristics of the Anti-Christ. Transgression is more powerful, and is a step to a more permanent bondage. Transgression is connected to trespass, which is a willful violation of the law.

Iniquity:

Psalm 103:3: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases.

Isaiah 53:5-6:

***5 But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.
6 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.***

Isaiah 53:11: He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.

Iniquities cleverly cling to us and entangle us. Having become a part of our lives, they are second nature, a habit. There is a sin that becomes like cords which wrap around you. You get caught in the entanglement and just cannot break free. These cords are cords of iniquity.

Hebrew: *perverseness, bowed down, twisted, to be bent or crooked, to be wrung out of course.*

Dake's Annotated Bible: *It signifies not merely that which is wrong, but the tendency to do wrong. This inclination lies in the disposition and nature, and not merely in an act of transgression of the law.*

Iniquities are second-nature sins that drive us to repeatedly and continually commit sin. It's a twisting so that we can't go the right way, and is a perversion of intents which affects our will. These are much more powerful definitions than just being guilty, erring, and/or slipping.

John 8:31-36:

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

Romans 6:12-22:

12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

I John 3:6-10:

6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

I John 5:18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

In **I Corinthians 15:34** we're commanded to: **Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.** So said the Holy Spirit through the apostle Paul.

When The Holy Spirit is convicting us of committing sin, we will loathe ourselves, grieve and mourn over those shameful deeds, and cry out to the Lord for DELIVERANCE.

This deliverance is provided for us, thank The Lord, in the following Scriptures:

2 Titus 4:18: The LORD shall DELIVER me from EVERY EVIL WORK, and will preserve me unto His Heavenly Kingdom: to Whom be glory forever and ever.

Psalm 121:7: The LORD SHALL PRESERVE thee FROM ALL EVIL: and HE shall preserve thy soul.

Matthew 6:13: LEAD us not into Temptation, but DELIVER US FROM EVIL.

John 17:15: I pray not that Thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that Thou shouldest KEEP THEM FROM THE EVIL.

2 Thessalonians 3:3: The LORD is faithful Who shall establish you, and KEEP YOU FROM EVIL.

2 Timothy 2:19: Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are His. And Let EVERYONE that nameth the Name of CHRIST DEPART FROM INIQUITY.

1 Samuel 31:13: And they took their bones, and buried them under a tree at Jabesh, and fasted seven days.

Job 28:28: And unto man he said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding.

Psalm 34:14: Depart from evil, and do good; seek peace, and pursue it.

Psalm 37:27: Depart from evil, and do good; and dwell for evermore.

Proverbs 3:7: Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil.

Proverbs 16:17: The highway of the upright is to depart from evil: he that keepeth his way preserveth his soul.

Daniel 9:13: As it is written in the law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand thy truth.

Titus 2:14: Christ gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us FROM ALL INIQUITY, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

2 Peter 2:9-10:

9 THE LORD knoweth how to DELIVER the GODLY out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto The Day of Judgment to be punished.

10 Chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness.

1 Peter 4:1-2:

1 Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin;

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

1 Corinthians 10:13: There hath NO TEMPTATION taken you, but such as is common to mankind: but GOD IS FAITHFUL, Who will not allow you to be TEMPTED above that ye are able (to bear) but will with the Temptation also make a WAY TO ESCAPE, that ye may be able to bear it. PRAISE THE LORD!!!

(C) MOURNING over the loss of loved ones, or loss of position, property, or health.

Also, we MOURN when searching the Scriptures on their CALL TO HOLINESS, and we see how far short we are in coming up to that HIGH MORAL STANDARD. Here are just a few Bible references directing us to answering God's call to SCRIPTURAL HOLINESS:

Ephesians 1:4: According as HE hath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we SHOULD BE HOLY and without blame before Him in love.

Ephesians 5:25-27:

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

26 That he might SANCTIFY AND CLEANSE it with the washing of water by the word,

27 That he might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be HOLY and without blemish.

1 Thessalonians 4:3-7:

3 This is THE WILL OF GOD, even your SANCTIFICATION, that ye SHOULD ABSTAIN FROM FORNICATION.

4 That everyone of you should know how to possess his vessel in Sanctification and honor;

5 NOT IN THE LUST OF CONCUPISCENCE, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, BUT UNTO HOLINESS.

Romans 6:18-22:

18 Being then made FREE FROM SIN, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so NOW YIELD your members servants to RIGHTEOUSNESS unto HOLINESS.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now BEING MADE FREE FROM SIN, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit UNTO HOLINESS, and the end everlasting life.

Hebrew 12:14: Follow peace with all men, and HOLINESS, without which NO MAN SHALL SEE GOD.

Hebrew 12:10: For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be PARTAKERS OF HIS HOLINESS.

I Peter 1:15-16:

15 But as He which hath CALLED YOU IS HOLY, so BE YE HOLY in all manner of conversation;

16 because as it is written, BE YE HOLY; FOR I AM HOLY.

D. MOURNING over LOST SOULS, over LOST LOVED ONES, over a LOST WORLD dead in trespasses and sins.

BELOVED, MOURNING OVER SPIRITUAL POVERTY, our poorness of spirit, our weaknesses, our Carnality, our coming short of God's glory, our lack of HOLINESS, and our inability — in ourselves — to OVERCOME SIN is a BLESSING!

This is what The LORD JESUS SAID at the very beginning of our TEXT. Let me give you several Bible proofs:

(PLEASE NOTE: These PROOFS will include our MOURNING over the SINS being committed by others, including our brothers and sisters in Christ.)

ILLUSTRATION:

- **Ezekiel 9:4: The LORD said unto him: GO through the midst of the CITY (The Holy City of Jerusalem) and SET A MARK upon the foreheads of those that "SIGH" and "CRY" for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof.**

- **Ezekiel 9:6: COME NOT NEAR ANYONE upon whom is THE MARK; and begin at My Sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men** (the snow-white headed, elderly senior citizens). **Slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which were before the house.**

(NOTE: Please read the whole passage for the complete scenario.)

- **I Corinthians 5:1-2, 13:**
1 It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.
2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you.
13 But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.
- **2 Corinthians 12:21: And lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall BEWAIL many which have SINNED ALREADY, and have NOT REPENTED of the uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed.** (NOTE: BEWAIL means to MOURN over their dirty deeds.)
- **Philippians 3:18-19:**
18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even WEEPING, that they are the enemies of the CROSS of CHRIST.
19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their SHAME, who mind earthly things.)
- **James 4:7-11:**
7 Submit yourselves therefore to GOD. RESIST the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you.

(NOTE: This Scripture is addressed to believers and not to sinners.)

- **8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded.**
- **9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness.**
- **10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.**

11 Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

Who are these BLESSED MOURNERS of whom The Lord Jesus Christ is speaking and TO WHOM CHRIST is addressing this BE-ATTITUDE? They are the very ones GOD will BLESS by DIVINE and HEAVENLY COMFORT. We're looking forward to share this GOOD NEWS with you directly.

THE GOOD NEWS is this: We do not have to live with MOURNING all of our lives over the first two causes for THIS MOURNING to which our Blessed Lord is referring. We do not have to spend the rest of our lives MOURNING over OUR POORNESS of SPIRIT or over our conflict with Carnality.



The Old Man, and THE FLESH, and THE CARNAL MIND are CONQUERED when we are CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST:

- **Romans 6:6: *Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.***
- **Galatians 2:20: *I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.***
- **Galatians 5:24: *And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.***
- **Colossians 3:5-11:**
 - 5 *Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:***
 - 6 *For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience:***
 - 7 *In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.***
 - 8 *But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.***
 - 9 *Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;***
 - 10 *And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:***
 - 11 *Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.***

GOD ALMIGHTY has provided for DELIVERANCE from OLD SELF-LIFE. HE has also promised us DELIVERANCE from SIN, SATAN, and the OLD CARNAL SELF-NATURE.

He will turn the MOURNERS into LAUGHERS just like The Lord Jesus promised in **Luke 6:21**.

Luke 6:21: Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

That's not all, there is MUCH MORE!!! Those who have been MOURNING over PAST SINS COMMITTED, TAKE COURAGE, for you are already on THE ROYAL ROAD to VICTORY. For that is the STARTING PLACE to living the TRIUMPHANT LIFE.

The Scriptures say in **2 Corinthians 1:9-10**:

***9 But we had the sentence of DEATH in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead:
10 WHO DELIVERED us from SO GREAT A DEATH, and DOTH DELIVER in whom we trust that He will yet deliver us; For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.***

You see, ONE DELIVERANCE is not enough. That first one came when we got saved and born again of the 'Spirit'. That is PAST DELIVERANCE! WE NEED PRESENT DELIVERANCE, and that is where the "DOTH DELIVER" comes in. Then, we will still need future DELIVERANCES, and that is where the last part comes in, PRAISE THE LORD!!!

The Third and the Fourth causes relating to our MOURNING.

We can get and keep the VICTORY over the first two already mentioned. However, these latter two we will just have to live with, because they do not involve us directly, only indirectly. It is our MOURNING over our LOST LOVED ONES, and over those who have gotten away from the Lord by playing around with sin, worldly pleasures, and filthy habits. All of these things are a constant source of grief and sorrow to the hearts of those who are LIVING THE CRUCIFIED LIFE.

If we don't grieve or aren't burdened for such as these, then we ourselves need another DIP in the Fountain open for sin and uncleanness.

Zechariah 13:1: In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.

We can also grieve over the loss of loved ones, and maybe other things dear to us as the song writer wrote:

"There is a FOUNTAIN filled with BLOOD, that flows from EMMANUEL'S VEINS, and sinners plunge beneath that flood, lose all their guilty stains."

If that's a little too heavy a message to share with them, we can at least give them this GOOD NEWS: THE PURPOSE OF CHRIST'S COMING, as stated in the following scriptures:

Acts 3:26: God sent His SON to BLESS you in TURNING AWAY every one of you from his iniquities.

JESUS SAID in ***John 8:32-36:***

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall MAKE YOU FREE!! Christ's audience responded by saying:

33 They answered Him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest Thou, Ye shall be made FREE?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily verily (i.e., truly, truly) I say unto you: Whosoever committeth SIN is THE SERVANT OF SIN.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the SON therefore SHALL MAKE YOU FREE YE SHALL BE FREE INDEED.

Romans 6:12-18:

12 Let not SIN therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

14 For SIN SHALL NOT HAVE DOMINION over you: for ye are not under The Law, but under GRACE.

15 What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under The Law, but under GRACE? GOD FORBID!!!

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then MADE FREE FROM SIN, ye became servants of RIGHTEOUSNESS.

Titus 2:11-14:

**11 For the grace of God that BRINGETH SALVATION hath appeared to all men,
12 Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;
13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the GREAT GOD AND OUR SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST;
14 Who gave Himself for us, that He might REDEEM US FROM ALL INIQUITY, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.**

Micah 7:18-19:

18 Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy.

19 He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.

NOTE: And, I might add, will hang up a sign saying: "NO FISHING"!!!

Psalm 32:1: Blessed (or HAPPY) is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered.

HAPPINESS COMES FROM GOD!!!! The first step to GOD'S HAPPINESS is THE FORGIVENESS of our SINS.

I John 1:9: If we CONFESS our SINS, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to CLEANSE us from ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.

Proverbs 28:13: He that COVERETH his sins shall not prosper; but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

BELOVED CHRISTIAN BROTHERS and SISTERS listen to this:

Psalm 126:5-6:

5 They that SOW (The Gospel Seed) in TEARS shall reap in JOY.

6 He that goeth forth WEEPING, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come with rejoicing bringing his sheaves (souls won to Christ) with him.

BLESSED ARE THEY THAT MOURN (The Lord Jesus said), **for they SHALL BE COMFORTED!!!** The BLESSED MOURNERS are those who have become so broken-hearted over their own failures, faults, frailties, flops, and foibles that they have gone into MOURNING over them. Then, and truly only then, are we humbled enough and tender-hearted enough to tenderly and compassionately, with weeping, bring the

GOSPEL MESSAGE to our own lost loved ones and to the many others who know little or nothing of the SAVING POWER of THE GOSPEL of CHRIST.

Now we can all much better see why The LORD JESUS places that SEVEN LETTER WORD “**BLESSED**” at the forefront of this TEXT.

BLESSED are THEY that MOURN, for THEY SHALL BE COMFORTED!!!!

“BLESSED”, you will remember, means HAPPINESS at the HIGHEST LEVEL and HAPPINESS in the NOBLEST DEGREE. GOD ALMIGHTY and HIS PRECIOUS SON, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, desire and want us to BE TRULY HAPPY and BLESSED. He is a “BLESSING” GOD.

QUESTION: Did you know that the Bible begins with GOD BLESSING our first parents in the world's historic morning?

ANSWER: The proof is found in **Genesis 1:28** where GOD BLESSED them, Adam and Eve, and GOD SAID unto them:

Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

THAT IS NOT ALL!!! There is MUCH MORE!!!! We cannot read this whole first Book of the Bible without bumping into that word “**BLESS**” and “**BLESSED**” and “**BLESSING**” over 70 times. Think of that!!!! And that is not all. Between the two covers of this HOLY BIBLE, it is repeated hundreds of times.

Let me take you to **Numbers 6:24-27** for just one stopping-off place. The Priests, the ministers of The Lord, are supposed to conclude each and every SABBATH SERVICE with this benediction:

***24 THE LORD BLESS THEE and KEEP THEE:
25 THE LORD make His face shine upon thee, and be GRACIOUS unto thee;
26 THE LORD lift up His countenance upon thee, and give thee PEACE.
27 And they shall put My Name upon the children of Israel; and I WILL BLESS THEM.***

QUESTION: Did you know that we, as believers, are supposed to BLESS one another?

ANSWER: That's RIGHT!!! Listen to **Psalm 129:8**:

Neither do they which go by say, THE BLESSING of THE LORD be upon you: WE BLESS YOU in THE NAME of THE LORD.

NOTE: The Lord is fussing at His people for failing to do this. I hope He isn't fussing at any of you over the same failure!

BLESSED or HAPPY are they that MOURN, for they shall be Comforted. JESUS SAID SO!!! The Holy Bible begins with BLESSING and also ends with BLESSING.

Before turning to Revelation where "BLESSED" is repeated SEVEN TIMES, let me take a brief stopping-off place at **Proverbs 10:22:**

THE BLESSING of THE LORD, it maketh RICH, and He addeth no sorrow with it.

Then, to our TEXT in **Matthew 5:3-9** where THE LORD JESUS CHRIST promises and provides NINE BLESSEDS to all of us. (This NINE — in the Science of Numerology — means HUMAN PERFECTION, or fullness, or completeness.)

Let us now go to the closing BOOK of THE HOLY BIBLE and take a good look at those SEVEN BLESSEDS flowing from the BLESSING GOD and from His Precious SON, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, and FROM THE BLESSED HOLY SPIRIT.

1. **Revelation 1:3: BLESSED is he that readeth, and they that hear THE WORDS of THIS PROPHECY, and KEEP (means OBEY, DO, and WALK IN) those things which are written therein: for The Time is At Hand.**

2. **Revelation 14:13: And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.**

3. Then in this next verse The Lord Jesus said:

Revelation 16:15: Behold, I come as a thief. BLESSED is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments (i.e., from becoming defiled by sinning - **Revelation 3:4**) **lest he walk naked** (for, in being defiled, we can lose our spiritual garments as indicated here) **and they see his shame.**

(Note that **Isaiah 61:10** below, along with **Matthew 22:2-14** and **Revelation 3:17-19**, all have reference to a church and not to sinners)

• **Isaiah 61:10: I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered**

me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.

- **Matthew 22:2-14:**

2 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

6 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

10 So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

- **Revelation 3:17-19:**

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

4. **Revelation 19:9: Blessed ARE THEY WHICH ARE CALLED unto the Marriage Supper of THE LAMB.**
5. **Revelation 20:6: BLESSED and holy is he that hath part in the First Resurrection: on such the Second Death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with HIM (i.e., THE Lord Jesus Christ) a thousand years.**
6. **Revelation 22:7: Behold, I COME QUICKLY (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ). BLESSED is he that KEEPETH the sayings of the prophecy of THIS BOOK.**
7. **Revelation 22:14: "BLESSED" are they that DO HIS COMMANDMENTS, that they may have right to the TREE OF LIFE, and may enter in through the gates into THE CITY (i.e., New Jerusalem - THE HOLY CITY).**
8. **Revelation 21:2: And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.**

Revelation 2:10-23:

10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges;

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass;

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first.

20 Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

NOTE: This same JESUS Who began His ministry pronouncing NINE BLESSINGS on certain designated people, concludes The Holy Bible pronouncing SEVEN SPECIAL BLESSINGS upon certain designated people.

QUESTION: What does this imply?

ANSWER: The LORD does not merely sling around HIS BLESSINGS on the uninterested, the uncaring, or the unqualified individuals.

- In this first BLESSING, the qualification is: BEING POOR in spirit.
- This second BLESSING falls gently like the rains from the heavens upon THOSE WHO MOURN, and this MOURNING is not:

(a) Mourning over the loss of a tooth, or eyesight, or hearing, or the loss of memory.

(b) MOURNING resulting from loss in the Stock Market, or a job, or my paycheck.

(c) MOURNING resulting from a car accident, or a plane crash, or a diving board accident that left someone impaired.

(d) MOURNING caused by the death of a child, a husband, or a wife, or a dear relative such as a father or mother, etc.

THIS MOURNING is associated with STEP NUMBER ONE — Those who are BLESSED because they see how POOR in SPIRIT they are. This KIND OF POVERTY was described in Lesson #1.

That first BLESSING paves the way into this SECOND BLESSING.

Matthew 5:4: BLESSED are they that MOURN, for they SHALL be COMFORTED.

QUESTION: What, then, are these MOURNERS MOURNING over?

ANSWER:

(a) It was their LACK OF SPIRITUAL POWER to overcome the world, the flesh, the devil, and the sins that so easily beset them.

Hebrews 12:1-2:

1 Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,

2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

(b) The LACK of SCRIPTURAL HOLINESS of HEART.

(c) The LEANNESS of their soul in understanding the Word of God.

(d) Their inadequacy in witnessing for Christ to relatives and friends on The Saving Power of the Lord Jesus Christ. The devil's most effective tool in keeping us withdrawn is: The spirit of Fear.

2 Timothy 1:7: For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

(e) This is MOURNING over a CARNAL NATURE, and The Old Man dominating their lives, keeping them in bondage and in defeat spiritually.

(f) This is MOURNING over a lukewarm state of heart, and coldness of heart as described in **Revelation 3:14-19:**

14 And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

NOTE: One of the most beautiful sights is A MOURNERS BENCH, as they used to call it, in our CHURCHES. In these modern times they call it THE ALTAR, and even THAT ALTAR is making a disappearing act in many modern churches. We speak this with regret and sadness of heart. To me, it is the MOST IMPORTANT piece of FURNITURE in the CHURCH. Only The Lord knows about the SPECIAL HANDKERCHIEF which we have carried for years in our suit pocket which has soaked up those pools of TEARS which have been shed at the old fashioned MOURNERS BENCH.

Joel 2:12-17:

12 Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning:

13 And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil.

14 Who knoweth if he will return and repent, and leave a blessing behind him; even a meat offering and a drink offering unto the LORD your God?

15 Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly:

16 Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet.

17 Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, O LORD, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God?

Malachi 2:13: And this have ye done again, covering the altar of the LORD with tears, with weeping, and with crying out, insomuch that he regardeth not the offering any more, or receiveth it with good will at your hand.

One day my wife, in seeing that SPECIAL HANDKERCHIEF and how stained it was, wanted to wash it. I had to entreat her NOT TO DO IT, for those TEARS that were staining it were too sacred and too precious to be washed away out of that

handkerchief. She thought I was becoming a little peculiar, and told me so. Then, we gave her some SCRIPTURES on HOW TEARS TOUCH GOD'S BIG HEART up there in HEAVEN.

TEARS TOUCH GOD'S HEART:

1. **2 Kings 20:1-6:**

1 In those days was Hezekiah sick unto death. And the prophet Isaiah the son of Amoz came to him, and said unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Set thine house in order; for thou shalt die, and not live.

2 Then he turned his face to the wall, and prayed unto the LORD, saying,

3 I beseech thee, O LORD, remember now how I have walked before thee in truth and with a perfect heart, and have done that which is good in thy sight. And Hezekiah wept sore.

4 And it came to pass, afore Isaiah was gone out into the middle court, that the word of the LORD came to him, saying,

5 Turn again, and tell Hezekiah the captain of my people, Thus saith the LORD, the God of David thy father, I have heard thy prayer, I have seen thy tears: behold, I will heal thee: on the third day thou shalt go up unto the house of the LORD.

6 And I will add unto thy days fifteen years; and I will deliver thee and this city out of the hand of the king of Assyria; and I will defend this city for mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake.

2. **Isaiah 38:5: Go, and say to Hezekiah, Thus saith the LORD, the God of David thy father, I have heard thy prayer, I have seen thy tears: behold, I will add unto thy days fifteen years.**

3. **2 Chronicles 34:26-28:**

26 And as for the king of Judah, who sent you to enquire of the LORD, so shall ye say unto him, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel concerning the words which thou hast heard (i.e., King Josiah);

27 Because thine heart was tender, and thou didst humble thyself before God, when thou heardest his words against this place, and against the inhabitants thereof, and humbledst thyself before me, and didst rend thy clothes, and weep before me; I have even heard thee also, saith the LORD.

28 Behold, I will gather thee to thy fathers, and thou shalt be gathered to thy grave in peace, neither shall thine eyes see all the evil that I will bring upon this place, and upon the inhabitants of the same. So they brought the king word again.

4. NOTE: This next person is a stunning and shocking example of how "HUMBING"

DOWN, PRAYING, FASTING, and even brokenhearted tears of repentance will touch God's heart. The person, believe it or not, is king Ahab. Elijah is sent by The Lord to this wicked king with a message of JUDGMENT, saying:

I Kings 21:19: And thou shalt speak unto him, saying, Thus saith the LORD, Hast thou killed, and also taken possession? And thou shalt speak unto him, saying, Thus saith the LORD, In the place where dogs licked the blood of Naboth shall dogs lick thy blood, even thine.

King Ahab's response: ***Hast thou found me, O mine enemy?***

The Prophet Elijah's answer to this question in **verses 20-21:**

20 I have found thee: because thou hast sold thyself to work evil in the sight of The Lord.

21 Behold, I will bring EVIL upon thee, and will take away thy posterity, and will cut off from Ahab him that pisseth against the wall, and him that is shut up and left in Israel.

QUESTION: What did king Ahab do?

ANSWER: ***I Kings 21:25-29:***

25 But there was none like unto Ahab, which did sell himself to work wickedness in the sight of the LORD, whom Jezebel his wife stirred up.

26 And he did very abominably in following idols, according to all things as did the Amorites, whom the LORD cast out before the children of Israel.

27 And it came to pass, when Ahab heard those words, that he rent his clothes, and put sackcloth upon his flesh, and FASTED, and lay in sackcloth, and went softly.

28 And THE WORD OF THE LORD came to Elijah the Tishbite, saying,

29 Seest thou how Ahab humbleth himself before me? because he humbleth himself before me, I will not bring THE EVIL (i.e., the calamities) in his days: but in his son's days will I bring THE EVIL upon his house.

The Scriptures declare in **Proverbs 15:3: The EYES OF THE LORD are in every place, beholding the evil and the good.**

The Lord God is watching every action coming from King Ahab. Suddenly HE calls out to Elijah, even before the prophet got completely out of the Outer Court of the king's palace, to turn around and take a good look at Ahab as he's all broken up inside and it is manifesting itself in his actions. Go back and tell him that I am going to lift off the JUDGMENT SENTENCE from him.

WHAT!! That is the most unlikely thing any of us would have expected. God's heart is touched when we get all broken up inside.

4. Mark 9:20-26:

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

22 And ofttimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him (the father of a demon-possessed child), If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with TEARS, LORD, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead.

Those TEARS touched THE LORD JESUS.

5. Luke 6:21: JESUS SAID: Blessed are ye that WEEP NOW: for ye shall laugh.

6. Luke 19:41: When JESUS was come near, HE beheld The CITY (JERUSALEM) and WEPT over it.

Matthew 23:37: O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chicks under her wings, and ye would not!

7. John 20:11-15:

11 But Mary stood without at the sepulchre WEEPING: and as she WEPT, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of JESUS had lain.

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why WEEPEST thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away MY LORD, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why WEEPEST thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

NOTE: FOUR TIMES our attention is pointed to just one thing that Mary was doing: WEEPING. Mary Magdalene saw more and learned more through her TEARS than all the others who had come to this sepulcher. TEARS touched the heart of JESUS and HE revealed Himself to Mary FIRST.

Mark 16:9: Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

OUR LORD continues to bring BLESSINGS on the MOURNERS. A TEAR-STAINED FACE touches HIS HEART. TEARS speak a language that TOUCHES HEAVEN. When we have an awareness of our SPIRITUAL POVERTY, that knowledge is WORTHLESS unless it leads us to MOURNING over it. There are too many dry-eyed prayers, with prayers only getting to the ceiling, NOT ANY FURTHER.

PRAYERS that have HEART in them are THE ONES that get an audience with THE ALMIGHTY. These are the ones whom our LORD JESUS CALLS BLESSED and are the ones who are COMFORTED. It's not the SAD or SORROWFUL who are BLESSED, but MOURNERS.

ILLUSTRATION:

Listen to the prophet Isaiah crying out, lamenting, grieving, praying, confessing, and saying in **Isaiah 6:5**:

WOE IS ME, for I AM UNDONE.!!! I am a man of unclean lips.

That man got an audience with God, and The Lord sent forth an angel with a message to him of forgiveness and pardon, along with a divine call on his life into the Lord's service.

When Simon Peter went out and WEPT BITTERLY over his faults, failures, and sins, he got an audience with Heaven, and he got a BLESSED answer to his prayer. It was a personalized response from The Lord saying:

Mark 16:7: Go your way, tell His disciples and PETER that HE goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see HIM, as HE said unto you.

Peter's sobbing is turned into SONG. SOBBING AND MOURNING will make the TEARS to flow, and they will TOUCH THE LORD'S HEART when they come from our

HEART grieving over our SPIRITUAL POVERTY and 'UNDONENESS' just as Isaiah's and the Apostle Peter's PRAYERS were motivated and activated. WE NEED THE OLD-FASHIONED MOURNERS BENCH in our CHURCHES, and a whole lot of MOURNERS FILLING THEM under HOLY GHOST CONVICTION!!!!
QUESTION: HOW are these MOURNERS BLESSED?

ANSWER: The Lord Jesus said in **Matthew 5:4: *Blessed are they that MOURN, for THEY SHALL BE COMFORTED.***

QUESTION: Did you know that this PRECIOUS PROMISE coming from the lips of THE LORD JESUS is PROPHEPIC and is part of the PROPHECY which relates to CHRIST'S COMING?

ANSWER: It is recorded in **Isaiah 61:1-3:**

1 THE SPIRIT of THE LORD GOD is UPON ME (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ; see **Luke 4:17-18** below) **because THE LORD HATH ANOINTED ME to preach good tidings to the meek. HE hath sent ME to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim LIBERTY to the captives, and the opening of the prison** (The Sinner's Penitentiary - see **Ezekiel 39:23** below) **of them that are bound;**

2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; TO COMFORT "ALL" that MOURN; ("ALL" means that no one is left out.)

3 To appoint unto them that MOURN in Zion, to give unto them BEAUTY for ashes, the oil of JOY FOR "MOURNING", the garment of PRAISE for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

Luke 4:17-18:

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised.

Ezekiel 39:23: And the heathen shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they trespassed against me, therefore hid I my face from them, and gave them into the hand of their enemies: so fell they all by the sword.

GOD ALMIGHTY is a CARING GOD. His heart is touched and turned favorably towards us when we are MOURNING over our state of being undone and of our coming so short of His High Standards of HOLINESS, RIGHTEOUSNESS, and PURITY. HE promises SPECIAL BLESSINGS of DIVINE COMFORT to all who MOURN out of godly sorrow as stated in **2 Corinthians 7:10**:

2 Corinthians 7:10: For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

HE is THE GOD OF COMFORT.

(a) ***Isaiah 51:3: For THE LORD shall COMFORT Zion; HE will COMFORT all her waste places; and HE will make her wilderness like Eden, and her desert like the GARDEN of THE LORD; JOY and GLADNESS shall be found therein, thanksgiving, and the voice of MELODY.***

(b) ***Isaiah 66:13: As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I COMFORT you; and ye shall be COMFORTED in Jerusalem.***

(c) ***2 Corinthian 1:3-4:***

3 Blessed be GOD, even THE FATHER of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, The Father of mercies, and THE GOD of ALL COMFORT;

4 Who COMFORTETH us in all our Tribulation, that we may be able to COMFORT them which are in any trouble, by the COMFORT wherewith we ourselves are COMFORTED of GOD.

THAT IS NOT ALL. There is STILL MORE COMFORT coming from our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

(a) ***Matthew 5:4: Blessed are they that MOURN, for they shall be COMFORTED.***

(b) ***Isaiah 61:1-3:***

1 The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon ME; because the LORD hath anointed ME to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound;

2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to COMFORT ALL that mourn;

3 To appoint unto them that MOURN in Zion, to give unto them BEAUTY for ashes, the OIL OF JOY for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

(c) **John 14:18: I will not leave you COMFORTLESS. I will come to you.**

NOTE: How Christ will comfort us. HE is OUR COMFORTER, and then HE will do this:

John 14:16-17:

**16 And I will pray The Father, and HE shall give you “ANOTHER COMFORTER”, that HE may abide with you FOREVER,
17 Even the SPIRIT OF TRUTH; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.**

QUESTION: Did you perceive in that key word “**ANOTHER COMFORTER**” what The Lord Jesus is saying?

ANSWER: THE LORD JESUS is our COMFORTER, and He will pray for us to receive “Another” Comforter Who will be just like HE is.

THAT IS NOT ALL, there is STILL MORE TO COME.

THE HOLY SPIRIT IS NOW OUR COMFORTER. THE HOLY SPIRIT is our “ANOTHER COMFORTER”.

This is The Lord Jesus Christ's all-wise way and manner of introducing THE HOLY SPIRIT unto the CHURCH. CHRIST calls HIM “ANOTHER COMFORTER”. Then He calls HIM: THE COMFORTER. WHAT AN “ENDEARING” TITLE to be ascribed to THE HOLY SPIRIT!!!

The Lord Jesus sent Him in His foreknowledge that there would come a time when preachers and teachers would be influenced by the cunning and crafty devices of the devil to cause the End-Time Church to become “ALLERGIC” to the HOLY GHOST. I suppose that word “GHOST” might scare some folks skinny, but “GHOST” really means “SPIRIT”.

But The Lord Jesus sent Him to offset these devices of the devil and the ignorance of Carnal Christian leaders who do not have THE BAPTISM of THE HOLY GHOST. These leaders have even done some strange things in warning their congregations against seeking for the Baptism of The Spirit.

THE LORD JESUS, in HIS ALL-WISE COUNSEL, introduces us to THE HOLY SPIRIT as THE COMFORTER. This title, in itself, will allay, dismiss, and alleviate any fears from the hearts of the saints who have had negative remarks made to them concerning THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD. The devil hates the HOLY GHOST, for HE is the ONE

who CASTS out DEMONS and DEVILS exactly as the Lord Jesus said in **Matthew 12:28**:

But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

HE also gives us POWER to overcome all the devil's wiles, temptations, and SEDUCING SPIRITS:

1 Timothy 4:1: Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.

No wonder the DEVIL is ALLERGIC to THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD!!! That ought to tell you something, in itself, if you are withdrawn from seeking to be SPIRIT-FILLED.

THE HOLY SPIRIT is: "ANOTHER COMFORTER", "THE COMFORTER", and will do us GOOD:

1. ***Nehemiah 9:20: Thou gavest also THY GOOD SPIRIT to instruct them.***
2. ***John 14:26: But THE COMFORTER, which is THE HOLY GHOST, Whom The Father will send in MY NAME, HE (He, not an "it", but a PERSON to any Jehovah Witness reading this) shall TEACH you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.***

QUESTION: Did you take notice "WHAT" The Holy Spirit will do when HE comes?

ANSWER: There are SEVEN things which THE HOLY SPIRIT WILL DO FOR US mentioned by The Lord Jesus:

1. HE shall teach you all things.

John 14:26a: But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My Name, He shall teach you all things.

2. HE will bring all things to your remembrance.

John 14:26b: And bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

3. HE will testify of ME (i.e., THE Lord Jesus Christ).

John 15:26: But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, He shall testify of Me.

4. HE will reprove the world of sin, righteousness, and judgment.

John 16:8: And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.

5. HE will Guide you into all truth.

John 16:13a: Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak.

6. HE will show you things to come.

John 16:13: . . . and He will shew you things to come.

7. He shall glorify Me (The Lord Jesus Christ)

John 16:14: He shall glorify me: for He shall receive of Mine, and shall shew it unto you.

MY OH MY, WE SURELY NEED HIM, THIS BLESSED HOLY SPIRIT!!! I'm glad You sent HIM, LORD JESUS, and our kind and loving Heavenly Father!!!! Thank you for sending THE HOLY SPIRIT, THE COMFORTER!

3. John 15:26: But when THE COMFORTER is come, Whom I will send unto you from the Father, even The Spirit of Truth, which proceeds from The Father, HE shall testify of ME.

4. John 16:7: Nevertheless, I tell you the truth: IT IS EXPEDIENT (necessary, urgent, important) for you that I go away: for if I go not away, THE COMFORTER will not come unto you; but if I depart, I WILL SEND HIM unto you.

5. Acts 9:31: Then had the churches rest throughout all Judaea and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified; and walking in the fear of The Lord, and in the "COMFORT" of THE HOLY GHOST, were multiplied.

6. Acts 15:28: It seemed good to THE HOLY GHOST, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things.

SUMMARY:

I hope and pray that you have been BLESSED even studying this BE-ATTITUDE and — much more — have entered into that very HUMBLING experience of MOURNING so you also could enter in to this glorious COMFORT which comes from THE FATHER, THE SON, and THE HOLY GHOST.

QUESTION: With all this COMFORT, what are we to do with it? Hog it up all to ourselves?

ANSWER: No!!! NEVER!!!! We are to share it with those who need COMFORTING. Here is Scriptural proof:

2 Corinthians 1:3-4:

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all COMFORT;

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to COMFORT them which are in any trouble, by the COMFORT wherewith we ourselves are COMFORTED of GOD.

SO, LET'S PASS IT ON!!! The LORD wants us to begin with “MY PEOPLE” in **Isaiah 40:1-2**, as follows. You'll be BLESSED or HAPPY you did.

Isaiah 40:1-2:

1 Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God.

2 Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the LORD'S hand double for all her sins.

CLASS HOMEWORK: THE BEATITUDES
LESSON TWO: THE SECRET TO LIVING THE "BLESSED LIFE"

1. Define the word mourn from Webster's Dictionary.
2. What are the four main causes for mourning according to the study guide?
3. The _____ we are, the _____ we are in our souls, the more we will _____ over our undone condition.
4. Write out two scriptures which promise deliverance from sins for which the Holy Spirit convicts us.
5. Hebrews 12:10: God (_____) for our profit, that we might be _____.
6. Tell me in your own words the definition of sin, transgression, and iniquity.
7. Which two of the four causes for mourning do we not have to live with all our lives? Write them out.
8. Why is one deliverance not enough?
9. Which two of the four causes of mourning should remain with us? Write them out.
10. In your own words, what can we share with those lost loved ones over whom we mourn? Proverbs 28:13
11. The first beatitude paves the way into the second beatitude. What are the mourners of the second beatitude mourning over? (List all 6)
12. God Almighty is a caring God. His heart is touched and turned favorably towards us when we are _____ over our 'undone-ness', and our coming so short of His high standards of holiness, righteousness, and purity.
13. Tears touch the heart of God. Give two scriptures which support this statement.
14. What four attributes are found in the Garden of the Lord? (Isaiah 51:3)
15. We have a like ministry to the Lord Jesus. According to 2 Corinthians 1:3-4, what should we be able to do?
16. List the seven things that the Holy Spirit will do for us.
17. Reflecting on this message, have you freed yourself of the first two main causes of mourning so that you can focus on 3 and 4?

LESSON: #3
HOW TO LIVE THE "BLESSED" LIFE

TEXT: **BLESSED** (i.e., EXCEEDINGLY HAPPY) **are THE MEEK; for they shall inherit the THE EARTH. Matthew 5:5**

QUESTION: MEEKNESS!!!! What's THAT???

DEFINITION:

- A. WEBSTER: *Patient, mild mannered, gentle, kind; not inclined to get angry or show resentment.*
- B. New Century Dictionary: *Humbly patient, submissive when under provocation.*
- C. FUNK & WAGNALLS New Standard Dictionary: *Gentle and longsuffering disposition; humble and lowly.*
- D. THORNDIKE-BARNHART Comprehensive Desk Dictionary: *Not easily angered; submitting tamely when ordered about or injured by others; forbearing, docile.*

COMMENT: My oh my, with such a disposition, the world, the church, and the home would be a much better place with such people hanging around. Don't you also think so? Or are you in that group which believes that MEEKNESS is WEAKNESS?

If you are, then this study will be a real eye opener for you. The very FACT that these MEEK FOLKS are BLESSED ought to tell you how The Almighty God feels about them.

Secondly, the FACT that HE offers them such a huge hunk of REAL ESTATE for their inheritance ought to communicate a POWERFUL MESSAGE to all of us as to how valuable this ATTRIBUTE of CHRISTIAN CHARACTER really is.

QUESTION: How does THE ALMIGHTY GOD introduce this subject of MEEKNESS to the children of Israel?

ANSWER: By giving them a Model of MEEKNESS even before giving them any definition.

The Lord portrays the BEST MODEL of MEEKNESS, ever, in the person of MOSES. We see MOSES demonstrating a truly MEEK SPIRIT under the most trying of circumstances in a situation where most men would like to take a billy club and go to work on some hotheads and on some self-exalted highbrows.

But MOSES — this BIG MAN IN GOD, STRONG in THE LORD and in the Power of HIS MIGHT — just casts himself down on the ground with his face in the dirt, meekly humble before God. It takes a whole lot of STRENGTH to do that!!! Most people would have blown their fuse, got madder than a wet hen, and let the fur fly.

But NOT A MEEK MAN full of THE SPIRIT OF GOD with the FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT in his precious life. When Moses' own sister and brother rear up their criticizing and fault-finding heads and begin to spew out their resentment towards him because he married an Ethiopian woman, how does the Prophet Moses react?

With inward MEEKNESS.

ALMIGHTY GOD sees all this carrying on, and HE orders them to come onto HIS RED CARPET for questioning.

QUESTION: Do you know what God placed in His Word just before Miriam and Aaron got to the Tabernacle for questioning, with Moses accompanying them?

ANSWER: The very first reference to MEEKNESS in the whole Bible is in **Numbers 12:3** which says:

NOW the man MOSES was VERY MEEK, above all the men which dwell upon the face of the earth.

You see, GOD compares people with people, and when it comes to this HIGHLY RANKED VIRTUE, Moses excels everybody in the world. That is saying a mouthful. Moses is not only MEEK, but VERY MEEK. When The Almighty got through scolding both Miriam and Aaron, HE slapped the whammy of leprosy on Miriam, which is a horrible and incurable illness. Aaron got by with only a BAWLING OUT.

NOW let us take another look at the MEEKEST MAN on the face of the whole earth.

QUESTION: What does MOSES DO?

ANSWER: MOSES starts CRYING and praying for her to be HEALED.

He is pleading with GOD to make her well again. There is no malice in his spirit, no carnal attitude within saying: *“Just serves you right, you got what you deserved for running off at the mouth against me.”* That is what many people would have thought, if they didn't come out and say so.

I can just imagine in my heart that Miriam is more broken up over this manner of Moses' conduct than over her physical affliction. Such love, such kindness, such gentleness being poured out of Moses' heart and mouth on her behalf when she didn't deserve it. THAT in ITSELF did more to CURE her of CRITICIZING and FAULTFINDING than anything else could have done.

I. THE FIRST METHOD to explain Meekness.

QUESTION: When THE SUBJECT of MEEKNESS is introduced to us in the New Testament, how do you think the Lord reveals its MEANING and CHARACTERISTICS?

ANSWER: The LORD uses THE BEST MODEL, once again, rather than explanations or definitions. The all-wise Lord uses THE BEST ILLUSTRATION and EXAMPLE: **THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.**

You see, a PICTURE is worth a thousand words. People will more easily remember a PICTURE than they will many words.

Matthew 11:28-30:

28 Come unto ME all ye that labor and are heavy laden and I will give you rest.

29 Take My yoke upon you, and learn of ME; for I AM MEEK and LOWLY in heart (i.e., One of the Funk & Wagnalls Dictionary definitions is "lowly"); ***and ye shall find rest unto your souls.***

30 For MY Yoke is EASY and MY BURDEN is LIGHT.

Now, turning to **Matthew 21:1-5** we see The Lord Jesus is instructing two of His disciples on an errand to go into the next village and borrow a donkey for Him to ride into Jerusalem on in HIS TRIUMPHAL ENTRY.

Matthew 21:1-5:

1 And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

Zechariah 9:9: Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.

My heart (i.e., likely the Psalmist David speaking) is inviting a good matter:

Psalm 45:1-4:

1 My heart is inviting a good matter: I speak of the things which I have made touching the king: my tongue is the pen of a ready writer.

2 Thou art fairer than the children of men: grace is poured into thy lips: therefore God hath blessed thee for ever.

3 Gird thy sword upon thy thigh, O most mighty, with thy glory and thy majesty.

4 And in thy majesty ride prosperously because of truth and meekness and righteousness; and thy right hand shall teach thee terrible things

QUESTION: When Paul, one of the main apostles, would ILLUSTRATE MEEKNESS or GENTLENESS, who do you suppose he would use as his MODEL?

ANSWER: Scanning over the list of the multitudes of people whom he knew and knew well, he can find only ONE who is THE BEST example of MEEKNESS. HE is *THE LORD JESUS CHRIST*. There is NO MODEL just like "THIS MODEL".

2 Corinthians 10:1: Now I Paul myself beseech you by the MEEKNESS and GENTLENESS of "CHRIST", who in presence am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you.

II. THE SECOND METHOD GOD USES TO EXPLAIN and EXTOL and HONOR MEEKNESS is: BY DECLARING "THE BLESSINGS" and "THE BENEFITS", and "THE REWARDS" bequeathed to THE MEEK.

(a) **Psalm 22:26: THE MEEK shall eat and be satisfied; they shall praise THE LORD that seek HIM: your heart shall live FOREVER.**

(b) **Psalm 25:9: THE MEEK will HE guide in judgment: and THE MEEK will HE teach His Way.**

(c) **Psalm 37:11: The MEEK shall INHERIT THE EARTH; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace.**

(d) **Psalm 76:9: When God arose to Judgment, to save all THE MEEK of the earth.**

(e) ***Psalm 147:6: The LORD lifteth up the MEEK: He casteth down the wicked to the ground.***

(f) ***Isaiah 29:19: The MEEK shall also increase their JOY in THE LORD.***

(g) ***Isaiah 61:1: The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound.***

(h) ***Zephaniah 2:3: Seek righteousness; SEEK MEEKNESS: it may be ye shall be HID in THE DAY of THE LORD'S ANGER.***

THINK OF IT!!!! Here are eight precious promises which our Heavenly Father is directing exclusively to the MEEK folks. The Lord is pleased to even bend over backwards, and nearly outdoing even Himself, in pouring out SPECIAL BONUS BENEFITS to this select and ELECT group of His saints.

III. THE THIRD STEP IS: SEEK FOR MEEKNESS!!!

Zephaniah 2:3: Seek ye the LORD, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought his judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD'S anger.

The Holy Spirit is urging believers to DILIGENTLY SEEK for this marvelous FRUIT of THE SPIRIT. Since it is one of the NOBLEST VIRTUES with which any of us can be blessed, it is worth SEEKING FOR with all of our heart.

Since MEEKNESS is such a precious JEWEL in The Lord's sight, it is especially in order to give you a brief discourse on this RARE JUICY FRUIT of THE SPIRIT.

A. WHAT MEEKNESS is NOT:

- (1) It is NOT WEAKNESS. It is NOT a soggy, or spineless, or spiritless person. It is NOT BOASTFUL or BRAGG-A-DOCIOUS.

Dwight L. Moody, a real man of God, was approached by someone in his congregation who began telling him about his HUMILITY. He even likened himself to Moses, because some people told him that his face shines like the face of Moses did. Meekly, Pastor Moody replied: *"It is a glorious thing that the face of Moses shone. But it was even more GLORIOUS because the Scripture records: That he wist not that THE SKIN of his FACE SHONE. (Exodus 34:29)*

The article that we read on this incident, incidentally, did not include the response to Dr. D. L. Moody's remarks that Moses "wist not". Personally, I would like to hope that THE VACCINATION TOOK, and that he benefited from the admonition and became the wiser in the Lord.

One Vaccine that we know really works, and that is **Galatians 5:22-23**:

Galatians 5:22-23:

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

(2) MEEK PEOPLE are not DOMINEERING, DOMINATING, CONTROLLING, or PUSHEY.

B. WHAT DIVINE MEEKNESS REALLY IS:

(1) It is a manifestation of the Fruit of the Spirit wherein all the coarseness and brashness of the carnal nature is PURGED OUT. Then, in its place, there comes a refinement of the personality which makes that person strong in The Lord and in the power of His Might. This is the "WHY" behind The Lord's choosing of Moses above Aaron, his brother. MOSES WAS VERY MEEK above all the indwellers on planet earth. God CHOOSES MOSES, therefore, to be the CAPTAIN over the hosts of Israel — some two and one-half million people. He is to lead them into the Promised Land.

ILLUSTRATION:

It's customary during the yearly Methodist Church Conference to have its ministers give their annual report before the Conference. The Bishop then was DR. SMITH who presided over the meeting of which we are about to make reference. The preachers were getting up and coming forward telling of their accomplishments during the previous year. It seems that each one was trying to "out do" the previous one. When the day was coming to its close and all the roosters were through crowing, an old veteran preacher slowly arose. He came forward with bowed head, and eyes were focused on him, for this white-headed gentleman was greatly respected by the whole assembly. His name was called FATHER WHITE. Tottering, he came forward, leaning heavily on his cane. He meekly gave his report, his voice faltering at times. He said:

"Gentlemen, I do not have much to report. It was nearly a century ago when I saw the light of day. It was nearly that long ago I really saw THE LIGHT of THE WORLD, The Lord Jesus Christ, and HE became my Savior. Over sixty years it's been my

privilege to PREACH THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST. But today my heart cries out to DO MORE SERVICE FOR JESUS alone. However, my poor faltering feet are too weak to take me where I desire to go. All that God has accomplished in and through me has been done in the power of The Lord.” Then, pausing, he cleared his throat and burst into singing this song:

NAUGHT have I gotten, but what I received; Grace hath bestowed it, since I believed; Boasting excluded, pride I abase; I'm only a sinner, but now saved BY GRACE.

The congregation of ministers spontaneously joined in and sang that beautiful old song with him, many with mixed emotions which spread throughout the whole assembly. The Secretary who wrote up the report of the conference said: *“How small we all felt that day. How very little were we after all.”*

This is merely another example and SAMPLE of what DIVINE MEEKNESS really is. It is an ADORABLE GEM, but when adorning the heart of the Spirit-filled, it is an Ornament that makes its possessor just “SINGLED OUT” without desiring to be.

ILLUSTRATION:

The Blessed Lord Jesus, who is the epitome of MEEKNESS, singled out John the Baptist as a pristine example of MEEKNESS. Christ asked his audience these questions:

Matthew 11:8-11:

**8 What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?
9 But what went ye out to SEE? A man clothed in soft raiment? What went ye out to SEE? A PROPHET? Yea, I say unto you, and MORE THAN A PROPHET.
10 For this is he, of whom it is written: Behold, I send MY MESSENGER before Thy face, (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ) which shall prepare THY WAY before THEE.
11 Verily, I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a GREATER PROPHET than John the Baptist!!!**

NOW LISTEN!!! When that GREAT PROPHET, acclaimed so by CHRIST, was coming to the close of his ministry before his martyrdom, he said these words as he pointed toward The Lord Jesus Christ:

John 3:30: HE MUST INCREASE, and I MUST DECREASE!!

THAT IS WHAT MEEKNESS is like in action. That is how it manifests itself in such an unassuming way. There is no fanfare, no tooting of ones own horn, or bragging or boasting about one's self.

There was a preacher on TV for many years who said in his pulpit: *“Blessed is the man that TOOTETH his OWN HORN, for if he doesn't do it, nobody else will do it for him.”* That man, needless to say, is no longer in full-time ministry for The LORD JESUS CHRIST.

The apostles of our Lord Jesus came back to HIM rejoicing because DEMONS were subject unto them in JESUS' NAME. Our Lord Jesus interrupted them by saying:

Luke 10:17-20:

17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

Before coming to STEP #4 on: HOW TO OBTAIN MEEKNESS which The Lord admonished us to do in **Zephaniah 2:3**, we feel much constrained to set before you the GREATEST EXAMPLE of “MEEKNESS”. The others whom we have set forth are excellent, but this ONE is SUPER-EXCELLENT. THE ONLY ONE who is set forth in the New Testament as our MODEL is **THE LORD JESUS CHRIST**.

We will list several examples of HOW CHRIST MANIFESTED MEEKNESS when others would have manifested WEAKNESS under similar circumstances. HE ALONE is our PRISTINE EXAMPLE: (My heart overflows with joy for this privilege to BRAG ON JESUS.)

When The Lord Jesus was a boy, after his Bar mitzvah (at which time he is declared an adult, a MAN), His parents left for home after this glorious service, but HE is not traveling with them. He had remained in THE HOUSE OF THE LORD. He is among the doctors of the LAW with alphabet soup degrees after their names. He is asking them questions and — believe it or not — is ANSWERING MANY OF *THEIR* QUESTIONS. They marvel and are astonished at Christ's UNDERSTANDING and ANSWERS. Then Christ's mother barges into the service emotionally upset. She scolds HIM saying:

Son, why has thou thus dealt with us? Behold, thy father and I have sought Thee sorrowing? Luke 2:48

Listen now to THE LORD JESUS' answer to the question:

How is it that ye sought ME? Wist ye not that I MUST BE ABOUT MY FATHER'S BUSINESS? Luke 2:49

NOTE: There are two important things to learn in our Lord's answer.

(a) Jesus corrects His mother's mistake in calling Joseph Jesus' father. For Christ was conceived of THE HOLY GHOST, and not by Joseph.

(b) Secondly — and this is PRIMARY — CHRIST had just begun HIS FATHER'S BUSINESS, fulfilling the first part of His purpose in being sent into the world. CHRIST'S true FATHER is ALMIGHTY GOD!!! *His BUSINESS comes FIRST!*

NOW we're ready for our first example of CHRIST'S manifested MEEKNESS, even at this early age:

Luke 2:51: He went down with them, and was SUBJECT unto them.

When we go back to page 62 to those four definitions of MEEKNESS — submissive and submitting gently when ordered about — they just fit our LORD JESUS to a tee.

2. In the **sixth chapter of John** — after Christ had performed one of HIS GREATEST MIRACLES in feeding 5,000 men besides women and children on five loaves and two little fishes of a child's lunch — the multitude decided to TAKE JESUS BY FORCE and MAKE HIM KING. (They didn't know it, but JESUS WAS BORN KING.):

Matthew 2:2: Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship Him.

What did THE LORD JESUS DO? He slipped away through the midst of the crowd and went up into a mountain alone, and prayed with His disciples.

John 6:5-21:

5 When Jesus then lifted up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

6 And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.

15 When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

17 And entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

3. When the TIME WAS COME for the Lord Jesus to give His life on Calvary for the SALVATION of the whole world, He instructed two of His disciples to go into the next village and secure the use of a mother donkey and her colt. They bring these two to The Lord Jesus, HE ascends them, and commences His journey to the Holy City in His triumphal entry. Instead of THE KING riding on a white horse, a stallion (no, that will come later on in **Revelation 19:11-17**), He now rode on a mule to fulfill this prophecy in **Zechariah 9:9** and **Matthew 21:1-11**:

Zechariah 9:9: Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.

Matthew 21:1-11:

1 And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,
5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.
6 And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,
7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.
8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.
9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.
10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?
11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

4. When He was on trial before Pilate (and later Herod), while being falsely accused, HE MEEKLY answered not a word until Pilate marvels. Those accusing HIM beat on Him, spit in His precious face, and pulled out the hairs of His beard, but there is no retaliation or angry reproofs. With bowed head, Christ MEEKLY permits these insults.

5. When the Governor Pilate asked The Lord Jesus: **Art Thou The KING of The Jews?**, Jesus meekly answers: **Thou sayest. (Matthew 27:11)**

6. While BATTERED and BEATEN and hanging on THE CROSS, HE endures all the insulting jibes and insults of the crowd without even saying a word. That is MEEKNESS at its best.

7. **John 8:28-29:**

28 Then said JESUS unto them: When ye have lifted up The Son of Man, then shall ye know that I AM HE, and that I do NOTHING of MYSELF; but as My Father hath taught ME, I speak these things.

29 And He that sent Me is with Me: the Father hath not left Me alone; for I do always those things that please Him.

IV. HOW MEEKNESS IS TO BE OBTAINED

MEEKNESS is one of the NINE ATTRIBUTES of THE HOLY SPIRIT, called THE FRUIT of THE SPIRIT in **Galatians 5:22-23**. Of course, HE has far more than that, but these nine in particular HE desires to IMPART into you personally. Thereby, we will become more and more PARTAKERS of THE DIVINE NATURE.

Galatians 5:22-23:

22 The FRUIT of THE SPIRIT is LOVE, JOY, PEACE, LONGSUFFERING, GENTLENESS, GOODNESS, FAITH,

23 MEEKNESS, TEMPERANCE: against such there is no Law.

1. Many of you already know that the Holy Bible likens mankind to TREES, as seen in **Isaiah 61:3: That they might be called “TREES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS”, the planting of THE LORD, that HE might be glorified.**

2. **Psalm 1:1-2:**

1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.

2 But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night.

3. **Psalm 1:3: He shall be LIKE a TREE planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his “FRUIT” in his season; his leaf also shall not wither, and whatsoever he DOETH shall prosper.**

4. **Psalm 52:8: I am like a green Olive Tree in the House of God.**

5. **Psalm 92:12: The righteous shall flourish like THE PALM TREE: he shall grow like the cedar in Lebanon.**

6. **Proverbs 11:30: The FRUIT of the righteous is a TREE of LIFE; and he that winneth souls is wise.**

7. **Isaiah 17:24: All THE TREES of the field shall know that I THE LORD have brought down the high tree, have exalted the low tree, have dried up the green tree, and have made the dry tree to flourish: I THE LORD have spoken and have done it.**

8. **Ezekiel 31:8: The CEDARS in THE GARDEN of GOD (i.e., The Garden of Eden) could not hide him: the FIR TREES were not like his boughs, and the CHESNUT TREES were not his branches; nor any tree in THE GARDEN OF GOD was like him (Lucifer) in his beauty.**

9. **Daniel 4:10-16:**

10 Thus were the visions of mine head in my bed; I saw, and behold a tree in the midst of the earth, and the height thereof was great.

11 The tree grew, and was strong, and the height thereof reached unto heaven, and the sight thereof to the end of all the earth:

12 The leaves thereof were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all: the beasts of the field had shadow under it, and the fowls of the heaven dwelt in the boughs thereof, and all flesh was fed of it.

13 I saw in the visions of my head upon my bed, and, behold, a watcher and an holy one came down from heaven;

14 He cried aloud, and said thus, Hew down the tree, and cut off his branches, shake off his leaves, and scatter his fruit: let the beasts get away from under it, and the fowls from his branches:

15 Nevertheless leave the stump of his roots in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts in the grass of the earth:

16 Let his heart be changed from man's, and let a beast's heart be given unto him; and let seven times pass over him.

(This is interpreted in **Daniel 4:22-24**):

Daniel 4:22-24:

22 It is thou, O king, that art grown and become strong: for thy greatness is grown, and reacheth unto heaven, and thy dominion to the end of the earth.

23 And whereas the king saw a watcher and an holy one coming down from heaven, and saying, Hew the tree down, and destroy it; yet leave the stump of the roots thereof in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts of the field, till seven times pass over him;

24 This is the interpretation, O king, and this is the decree of the most High, which is come upon my lord the king:

10. Hosea 14:8: Ephraim shall say: What have I to do any more with idols? I have heard him, and observed him: I am like a green fir tree.

11. Matthew 3:10: Now also is the AX laid at the root of the TREES: therefore every TREE which bringeth not forth GOOD FRUIT is hewn down, and cast into the Fire.

Matthew 7:19: Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

12. Matthew 12:33: Either make the TREE good and his FRUIT good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: FOR THE TREE IS KNOWN BY HIS FRUIT.

13. Romans 11:17-22:

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree;

18 Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear:

21 For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

We're likened TO TREES, and also to "BRANCHES" of one Great Tree, and The Lord is looking for FRUIT on these branches:

Luke 13:6-9:

6 JESUS spake this Parable: A Certain Man had a FIG TREE planted in his Vineyard; and HE came and sought FRUIT thereon, and found none.

7 Then said HE unto the Dresser of His Vineyard; Behold, these three years I come seeking FRUIT on THIS FIG TREE, and find none: CUT IT DOWN; why cumbereth it the ground?

8 And He (i.e., The Vine Dresser) answering said unto HIM, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it;

9 and if it bear "FRUIT" well, and if not then after that Thou shalt cut it down.

NOTE: The Vinedresser is THE TYPE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

QUESTION: Since every tree is known by HIS FRUIT, what are you best known for?

Matthew 7:20: Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

Matthew 12:33: Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.

The PEAR TREE is easily known by its Pears; or a PEACH TREE by its peaches. The CHERRY TREE is easily known by its CHERRIES; a PLUM Tree is known by its plums.

NOTE: Our SUBJECT IS MEEKNESS which is a choice FRUIT of THE SPIRIT.

(a) **Galatians 5:22-23:**

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

(b) **Galatians 6:1: Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are SPIRITUAL, restore such an one in THE SPIRIT OF MEEKNESS; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.**

(c) **I Corinthians 4:21: What will ye? Shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and IN THE SPIRIT of MEEKNESS?**

QUESTION: HOW IS THE "FRUIT" of MEEKNESS to be OBTAINED?

ANSWER: By receiving The Baptism of the Holy Spirit is the answer. If this or any other of the SPIRIT'S FRUIT is diminishing in your life, simply seek The Lord for a FRESH ANOINTING of THE SPIRIT.

Psalm 92:10: I shall be anointed with fresh oil.

Acts 4:31: And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

V. THE "MEEK" have a very SPECIALIZED MINISTRY to PEOPLE WITH PROBLEMS.

A. LADIES WITH UNSAVED HUSBANDS

There is a special ability which God gives to the MEEK which can disarm any opposition in a backslidden or unsaved mate.

I Peter 3:1-4:

1 Likewise ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if they OBEY NOT THE WORD, they also may without the Word "BE WON" by the conversation of the wives;

2 While they behold your CHASTE CONVERSATION coupled with fear.

3 Whose adorning, let it NOT BE the outward adorning of plaiting the hair, the wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel;

4 But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even THE ORNAMENT OF A "MEEK" and "QUIET SPIRIT", which is in the sight of God of GREAT PRICE.

B. PEOPLE IN THE CHURCH who have SPIRITUAL CONFLICTS such as CARNALITY, and are ARGUMENTATIVE, STUBBORN, REBELLIOUS, or CANTANKEROUS can be won back and RESTORED by those who have a MEEK and QUIET SPIRIT, along with those who go off into HERESIES.

Galatians 6:1: Brethren, if any man be overtaken in a FAULT, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in THE SPIRIT OF MEEKNESS; considering your own selves, lest ye also be tempted.

2 Timothy 2:24-26:

24 The servant of the Lord must not strive; but be GENTLE unto all, apt to teach, patient,

25 in MEEKNESS instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them REPENTANCE to the acknowledging of the truth;

26 and that they may recover themselves out of the SNARE of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

1 Peter 3:14-15:

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousness' sake, HAPPY are ye: and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled;

15 But sanctify THE LORD GOD in your hearts: and be ready always to give an ANSWER to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with MEEKNESS and FEAR.

QUESTION: Why are those BLESSED with THE SPIRIT OF MEEKNESS MORE EFFECTIVE in handling these problem issues?

ANSWER: It is the very nature of a MEEK person to be: QUIET, GENTLE, KIND, LONGSUFFERING, PATIENT, NOT EASILY ANGERED, and GIVING SOFT ANSWERS to angry persons.

Proverbs 15:1: A soft answer turneth away wrath; but grievous words stir up anger.

VI. CHRISTIANS ARE ADMONISHED TO CONDUCT THEMSELVES WITH A MEEK SPIRIT:

Ephesians 4:1-3:

1 I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

2 With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love;

3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

Colossians 3:12-13:

12 Put on therefore, as the ELECT OF GOD, holy and beloved, bowels (hearts) of MERCIES, KINDNESS, HUMBLENESS OF MIND, "MEEKNESS", LONGSUFFERING;

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

I Timothy 6:11: But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, "MEEKNESS".

Titus 3:2: To speak EVIL of NO MAN, to be no brawlers, but gentle, showing all MEEKNESS unto all people.

James 3:13: Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with MEEKNESS of wisdom.

VII. "MEEKNESS" is ESSENTIAL in BIBLE STUDY, BIBLE READING, and in HEARING IT PREACHED

Does that stun anyone here? Have you ever heard such a DECREE taught before?

ANSWER: There are TWO ATTITUDES which most people take towards GOD'S WORD:

1. THE RIGHT ATTITUDE
2. THE WRONG ATTITUDE

Almighty God is very observant as to HOW we REACT to HIS WORD and HOW WE TREAT THE HOLY BIBLE.

A. THE RIGHT ATTITUDE is maintained by: MEEKNESS of HEART

James 1:21: Receive WITH MEEKNESS the Engrafted WORD, which is able to save your souls.

Hebrews 4:2: The WORD PREACHED did not profit them, not being mixed WITH FAITH in them that heard it.

Mark 4:16: And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness.

Matthew 13:20: *He that received THE SEED (i.e., THE WORD of GOD) in stony places, the same is he that HEARETH THE WORD, and anon with JOY receives it.*

Jeremiah 15:16: *Thy words were found, and I did eat them; and thy word was unto me the joy and rejoicing of mine heart: for I am called by thy name, O LORD God of hosts.*

Psalm 119:162: *I rejoice at thy word, as one that findeth great spoil.*

Job 23:12: *I have esteemed THE WORDS of HIS MOUTH more than my necessary food.*

Psalm 119:162: *I REJOICE at THY WORD, as one that findeth great spoil.*

B. WRONG ATTITUDES towards THE WORD OF GOD

Numbers 15:31: *Because he hath DESPISED THE WORD of THE LORD, and hath broken His Commandment, that soul shall utterly be cut off; his iniquity shall be upon him.*

Isaiah 5:24: *Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.*

Isaiah 30:12: *Wherefore thus saith the Holy One of Israel, Because ye despise this word, and trust in oppression and perverseness, and stay thereon . . .*

Jeremiah 6:19: *They have not hearkened unto MY WORDS, nor to MY LAW, but REJECTED it.*

Wrong attitudes towards God's Word are easily noticed by The Lord:

- **1 Samuel 15:26:** *Thou hast REJECTED THE WORD of THE LORD, and THE LORD hath REJECTED thee from being king over Israel.*
- **2 Kings 17:15:** *They REJECTED HIS STATUTES, and His Covenant that HE made with their fathers, and His Testimonies, and followed vanity, and became vain.*

- **Jeremiah 36:23:** *It came to pass, that when Jehudi had read three or four leaves (of The Word of God), he CUT IT WITH A PENKNIFE, and cast it into the fire that was on the hearth, until all the WORD was consumed in the fire that was on the hearth.*
- **Jeremiah 6:10:** *To whom shall I speak, and give warning, that they will hear? Behold, their ear is uncircumcised, and they cannot hearken: behold, the WORD of THE LORD is unto them a REPROACH; they have NO DELIGHT in it.*
- **Hosea 8:12:** *I have written to them THE GREAT THINGS OF MY LAW, but they were counted as a strange thing.*
- **Psalm 50:17:** *But unto the wicked GOD SAITH: What hast thou to do to declare MY STATUTES, or that thou shouldst take MY COVENANT in thy mouth? Seeing thou HATEST instruction, and CASTEST MY WORDS behind thee?*
- **Nehemiah 9:26:** *Nevertheless they were disobedient, and rebelled against thee, and cast thy law behind their backs, and slew thy prophets which testified against them to turn them to thee, and they wrought great provocations.*

QUESTION: Why is it so important to have RIGHT ATTITUDES towards GOD'S WORD?

ANSWER: Other people are influenced by our attitudes.

■ **We must never Corrupt the Word of God or handle it deceitfully.**

2 Corinthians 2:17: *For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.*

2 Corinthians 4:2: *But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God*

■ **We must never turn it into a lie.**

Romans 1:25: *Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator.*

■ We must never disbelieve it.

Luke 16:29-31:

29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And He said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

■ We must never rebel against it.

Psalm 107:11: Because they rebelled against the words of God, and contemned the counsel of the most High.

■ We must never not allow it to have any place in our hearts.

John 8:37: I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

■ We must never DISOBEY IT

1 Peter 2:7-8:

7 Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.

Then, AT THE JUDGMENT DAY, we will have to give account for our ATTITUDES. A MEEK ATTITUDE will go well for us!!!

REMEMBER!!!! THE WORD of GOD is very ESSENTIAL to our SOUL'S SALVATION as **James 1:18** and **21** set forth:

James 1:18, 21:

18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

Luke 8:12: Those by the way side are they that hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.

John 5:24: Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

1 Peter 1:23: Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

SUMMARY:

MEEKNESS of HEART is a great blessing in listening to GOD'S WORD. It will BLESS US spiritually and will entitle us the privilege of inheriting the earth, as the text declares. But that is not all!!!

GOD'S GOT A "BEAUTY SHOP". Have you been to it?

Psalm 149:4: The Lord taketh pleasure in His people; HE will BEAUTIFY the MEEK with SALVATION.

Observe mostly "WHO" HE beautifies.

CLASS HOMEWORK: THE BEATITUDES
LESSON THREE: HOW TO LIVE THE BLESSED LIFE

1. Memorize and write out the text for this lesson.
2. What is Webster's definition of meekness?
3. Look up the definition of humble in Webster's Dictionary and write it out. Is there a difference between the meaning of meekness and humble?
4. Who did Paul use as the only one who is the best example of meekness?
5. Write out two scriptures that illustrate the meekness of Jesus.
6. What blessings, benefits, and rewards does God bequeath to the meek? List 5.
7. Write out the complete definition of what Divine Meekness is. (See Page 67 of your syllabus.)
8. Do you think you can be meek without crucifying the flesh?
9. Who was the great prophet proclaimed by Christ and what did he say? (Write out the scripture referenced in the syllabus.)
10. (Jesus) Christ manifested _____ when others would have manifested _____ under similar circumstances. He _____ is our _____ example.
11. What two important things do we learn from Luke 4:42-49?
12. How is meekness to be obtained?
13. Men are likened to trees in the Word? What does Matthew 3:10 say about trees?
14. How is the fruit of meekness to be obtained?
15. How are we to restore people overtaken in a fault?
16. _____ is essential in Bible study, Bible reading, and Hearing it preached.
17. Select two wrong attitudes towards the Word of God and list them.

Lesson: #4
HOW TO ENTER INTO THE HAPPY and BLESSED LIFE

TEXT: **Matthew 5:6: BLESSED** (or EXCEEDINGLY HAPPY) **are they which DO HUNGER and THIRST after RIGHTEOUSNESS, for they SHALL BE FILLED.**

INTRODUCTION:

First of all, let's consider "WHO" is preaching this message. He is none other than The Lord from Heaven, The LORD JESUS CHRIST, The Son of The Living God. HE Who is the OFFICIAL HEAD of THE CHURCH is pronouncing a SPECIAL BLESSING on the ones who "QUALIFY" for such a blessing, a blessing of exceeding great happiness. The only ones who qualify are those who "HUNGER" and "THIRST" after RIGHTEOUSNESS. That is all that it takes, just a GOOD APPETITE for RIGHTEOUSNESS.

QUESTION: What is the Lord Jesus' purpose in preaching this sermon on The BE-ATTITUDES?

ANSWER: HE wants you and you and you and me to be BLESSED and HAPPY. Then there is another reason which should be included.

The Lord Jesus "LOVES" RIGHTEOUSNESS and hates iniquity (i.e., SIN); therefore His Heavenly Father has ANOINTED HIM with the Oil of "GLADNESS" above His fellows.

Hebrews 1:9: Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

As a matter of fact, the previous verse tells us He said this to His only begotten SON:

"Thy throne O GOD" (What? God the Father calling The Lord Jesus Christ "GOD"? Yes, that's right. And not 'a' god, as in the Jehovah Witness' Bible in **John 1:1**)

Again, God Almighty said in **Hebrews 1:8: THY Throne "O GOD" is forever and ever: a Scepter of "RIGHTEOUSNESS" is the Scepter of THY KINGDOM.**

The QUALIFYING CONDITIONS for this SPECIAL BLESSING is: HUNGER and THIRST.

However, this KIND of HUNGER and THIRST is A VERY UNUSUAL KIND of hunger and Thirst. We all know something about this Hunger and Thirst in the physical realm, even from babyhood. That little baby in the cradle is a big bundle of HUNGERS and THIRSTS. A healthy baby does not need its mother to coax it to eat or drink. When those hunger and thirst PANGS START, that little tike will yell his fool head off merely to get something to eat. That little youngster will not stop yelling and screaming until he gets what he wants.

Even to those little baby robins in the nest, when either parent came near, those little creatures began opening wide their mouths, yelling for something to eat. On the other hand, when little children or even young teens or adults get SICK, they lose their appetite.

When taken to the doctor, one of his first questions is: How is this child's appetite? He knows if that person isn't hungry or thirsty, there is something wrong. Loss of appetite is the RED FLAG that nature hangs out to tell us there is danger and TROUBLE AHEAD.

QUESTION: Why all this talk on appetite?

ANSWER: If you as a Christian are HUNGERING and THIRSTING after RIGHTEOUSNESS, it is a REAL GOOD SIGN that you are genuinely BORN AGAIN. You are truly BLESSED when you have a SPIRITUAL HUNGER AND THIRST AFTER RIGHTEOUSNESS.

Then, the SECOND EVIDENCE that we're TRULY BORN AGAIN of the SPIRIT of GOD is: our DOING RIGHTEOUSNESS. Here is Scriptural proof:

- ***Psalm 106:3: BLESSED are they that KEEP JUDGMENT (i.e., justice) and that "DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS" AT ALL TIMES.***
- ***I John 2:29: Now, little children, ABIDE in HIM; that, when HE shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before HIM AT HIS COMING. If ye know that HE is RIGHTEOUS, ye know that EVERYONE that "DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS" is BORN of HIM.***
- ***I John 3:7: Little children, let no man deceive you: he that "DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS" is righteous, even as HE is RIGHTEOUS.***

"DOING RIGHTEOUSNESS" is ONE of the NEW BIRTH "BIRTHMARKS".

Did you take notice that DOING RIGHTEOUSNESS is to be: "AT ALL TIMES" as in **Psalm 106:3** listed above?

Question: Did you also observe that The Lord Jesus Christ is placed 'slap dab' right in the middle of these next two verses?

CHRIST IS RIGHTEOUS, and those BORN of HIM give evidence to that fact by our DOING RIGHTEOUSNESS when we're partakers of the Divine Nature (**2 Peter 1:4**). Then it is only natural for us to do what the Divine Nature does:

The Divine Nature refers to a Godly character. When we have His Divine Nature, it is only natural for us to do what the Divine Nature does.

2 Peter 1:4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

There are some professing Christians who claim to be the followers of Christ, yet they are dabbling in SIN, condoning sin, excusing sin, and even justifying sinning. This is the very opposite of what it should be.

The Lord Jesus said in **John 10:27: MY SHEEP hear My voice and they FOLLOW ME.**

How can we be honestly and truly following CHRIST and still living in sin?

It says in **Psalm 23:3: He LEADETH ME IN THE PATHS of RIGHTEOUSNESS for HIS NAME'S SAKE.**

As you can readily see, there is a conflict right here and a contradiction to THE NEW BIRTHMARK'S evidence.

When we gave the illustration of physical HUNGER AND THIRST as being SIGNS of GOOD PHYSICAL HEALTH and well being, so likewise, SPIRITUAL HUNGER and THIRST for RIGHTEOUSNESS is a good SIGN of our spiritual HEALTH and WELL-BEING.

On the other hand, those who are physically ill, sick, and/or in poor health will reveal it waving the RED FLAG of "LOSS OF APPETITE" for food. They are being physically invaded by GERMS.

SPIRITUALLY, when being invaded by THE GERMS OF SIN, there is A LOSS of APPETITE for RIGHTEOUSNESS.

For those that are truly born again of the Spirit, if they have not as yet put off THE OLD MAN which is corrupt according to the DECEITFUL LUSTS (see **Ephesians 4:22**), they will yield to the temptations to SIN, because they lack the POWER to OVERCOME those lusts which are fanned by the TEMPTER and his demon agents.

Ephesians 4:22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts.

One healthy sign of the NEW BIRTH experience, however, is that they will grieve, lament, and mourn over their committing any kind of sin, and will REPENT and seek to TURN AWAY FROM IT.

On the other hand, the SINNER who has never been BORN AGAIN (**John 3:3-8**) will like SIN and love it like a HOG loves SLOP. He will WALLOW in it and enjoy it as pigs enjoy wallowing in the muck and the mire. That is what we ministers call a SIN-SICK SOUL.

John 3:3-8:

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Those who are PARTAKERS of THE DIVINE NATURE, however, will be SICK of SIN. Sin will be REPULSIVE TO THEM, and they will HATE it and ABHOR it, just like the BIBLE TELLS US TO DO:

(a) ***Romans 12:9b: ABHOR that which is EVIL, CLEAVE to that which is good.***

(b) ***Psalm 36:1-4:***

1 The transgression of the wicked saith within my heart, that there is no fear of God before his eyes.

2 For he flattereth himself in his own eyes, until his iniquity be found to be hateful.

3 The words of his mouth are iniquity and deceit: he hath left off to be wise, and to do good.

4 He deviseth mischief upon his bed; he setteth himself in a way that is not good; he abhorreth not evil.

(c) **Psalm 97:10a: Ye that love THE LORD, HATE EVIL.**

(d) **Psalm 119:104: Through thy precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way.**

(e) **Proverbs 8:13: The FEAR of THE LORD is: to HATE EVIL, pride, arrogancy . . .**

(f) **Proverbs 6:16-19:**

16 These six things doth the LORD hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him:

17 A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood,

18 An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief,

19 A false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren.

(g) **Proverbs 13:5a: A righteous man hateth lying.**

(h) **Amos 5:15a: Hate the evil, and love the good, and establish judgment in the gate:**

(i) **Isaiah 1:16: Wash you, make you clean; PUT AWAY THE EVIL of your doings from before Mine eyes; CEASE TO DO EVIL.**

Don't Forget, Preacher, Teacher — The subject is: **RIGHTEOUSNESS** !!!! Thanks for the reminder. Oh yes, that reminds me of:

Proverbs 14:32: RIGHTEOUSNESS exalteth a nation; but SIN is a REPROACH to any people.

And GOD ALMIGHTY does not want us, as His people, to be living in REPROACH, which means that we are not supposed to be living in sin.

- ***I John 3:6: Whosoever ABIDETH IN HIM SINNETH NOT: whosoever SINNETH hath not seen HIM, neither known HIM.***
- ***I John 5:18: Whosoever is BORN of GOD SINNETH NOT; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.***
- ***I Corinthians 15:34: Awake to RIGHTEOUSNESS, and SIN NOT: for some have not the knowledge of GOD: I speak this to your shame.***

WHAT is GOD'S SUPREME and ULTIMATE PURPOSE in OUR SALVATION?

1. That we should become: PARTAKERS of HIS DIVINE NATURE

2 Peter 1:4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

2. That we should be: CONFORMED to the IMAGE of HIS DEAR SON

Romans 8:29: For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.

3. That we should be: MADE PARTAKERS of HIS HOLINESS

Hebrews 12:10: Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable FRUIT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS unto them that are exercised thereby.

4. God gave to THE CHURCH apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers for the PERFECTING of the saints, for the work of the ministry, and for the edifying of the Body of Christ. For HOW LONG did God gave this 5-fold ministry?

Ephesians 4:11-13:

11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ.

What is THE “DIVINE NATURE” like?

RIGHTEOUS, RIGHTEOUSNESS, and HOLINESS are some of the supreme Attributes of:

- ALMIGHTY GOD THE FATHER
- THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
- THE HOLY SPIRIT

ALMIGHTY GOD'S SUPREME ATTRIBUTE IS RIGHTEOUSNESS

Psalm 11:7: The RIGHTEOUS LORD loveth RIGHTEOUSNESS; His countenance doth behold the upright.

Psalm 24:5: He shall receive the blessing from The Lord, and RIGHTEOUSNESS from the God of his salvation.

Psalm 40:10: I have not hid THY RIGHTEOUSNESS within My heart.

Matthew 6:33: But seek ye FIRST The Kingdom of God and HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS, and all these things shall be added unto you.

Romans 1:17: For therein is the RIGHTEOUSNESS of GOD revealed from faith to faith.

Romans 3:21: Now THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD without the Law is manifested.

Romans 3:22: Even THE RIGHTEOUSNESS of GOD which is by faith of Jesus Christ .

Romans 10:3: For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

2 Corinthians 5:21: For HE hath made HIM to be sin for us, Who knew no sin; that we might be made the RIGHTEOUSNESS of GOD in HIM.

James 1:20: For the wrath of man worketh not the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD.

2 Peter 1:1: To them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the RIGHTEOUSNESS of God and our Savior Jesus Christ.

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S RIGHTEOUSNESS:

Psalm 45:7: Thou lovest RIGHTEOUSNESS and hatest wickedness; therefore God, even Thy God hath anointed Thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

Hebrews 1:9: Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

Jeremiah 23:5-6:

5 Behold, the days come, saith The Lord, that I will raise unto David a RIGHTEOUS BRANCH, and a KING shall reign and prosper, and shall execute Judgment and Justice in the earth.

6 In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely; and this is HIS NAME whereby HE shall be called, THE LORD our RIGHTEOUSNESS.

I Corinthians 1:30: But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, Who of God is made unto us wisdom, RIGHTEOUSNESS, SANCTIFICATION and REDEMPTION.

Philippians 1:11: Being filled with the fruits of RIGHTEOUSNESS which are by JESUS CHRIST, unto the glory and praise of God.

Hebrews 1:8-9:

8 But unto The Son He saith: Thy throne, O God is forever and ever; a sceptre of RIGHTEOUSNESS is the Sceptre of Thy Kingdom.

9 Thou hast loved RIGHTEOUSNESS and hated iniquity; therefore God, even Thy God, hath anointed Thee with the oil of gladness above Thy fellows.

Hebrews 7:2 To Whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation KING of RIGHTEOUSNESS, and after that also KING of PEACE.

I John 2:29: If ye know that HE is RIGHTEOUS, ye know that everyone that doeth Righteousness is born of Him.

THE HOLY SPIRIT IS RIGHTEOUS (An attribute of the Holy Spirit)

Romans 14:17: For the Kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, peace, and joy in THE HOLY GHOST.

Ephesians 5:9: The Fruit of THE SPIRIT is in all goodness and RIGHTEOUSNESS and truth.

Romans 8:10b: The SPIRIT is life, because of RIGHTEOUSNESS.

THE SPIRIT of HOLINESS

- **Luke 1:75: In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.**
- **Romans 1:4: And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead.**
- **Romans 6:19: I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.**
- **Romans 6: 22: But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.**
- **Ephesians 4:24: And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.**

THE DIVINE OBJECTIVE IN OUR SALVATION is:

1. To make us partakers of the Divine Nature

2 Peter 1:4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

2. To conform us to the image of our Lord Jesus

Romans 8:29: For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

3. To make us partakers of his holiness and righteousness

Hebrews 12:10-11:

10 For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

4. To redeem us from all iniquity and to PURIFY unto Himself a special people

Titus 2:14: Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

5. To present us as a CHASTE VIRGIN to CHRIST (i.e., PURE and CLEAN both in soul and in body as per **2 Corinthians 7:1; 11:2;** and **Hebrews 10:22**)

2 Corinthians 7:1: Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2 Corinthians 11:2: For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

Hebrews 10:22: Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

OUR VERY “FIRST” Encounter with “RIGHTEOUSNESS” is IMPUTED and IMPARTED RIGHTEOUSNESS.

IMPUTE means: *to accredit to another person's account* (i.e., in Salvation) *CHRIST'S RIGHTEOUSNESS to our spiritual Bank Account.*

THE ‘NEGATIVE SIDE’ OF IMPUTING OR CREDITING CHRIST’S RIGHTEOUSNESS TO OUR ACCOUNT

IMPUTE, from a worldly standpoint, is to charge or ascribe or attribute a crime or a fault to another person's records or account. (Cf. **2 Samuel 19:19; Romans 4:8; Psalm 32:2;** and **2 Corinthians 5:19** all deal with the negative aspect.)

2 Samuel 19:19: And said unto the king, Let not my lord impute iniquity unto me, neither do thou remember that which thy servant did perversely the day that my lord the king went out of Jerusalem, that the king should take it to his heart.

Romans 4:8: Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

Psalm 32:2: Blessed is the man unto whom the LORD imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile.

2 Corinthians 5:19: To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

THE "POSITIVE SIDE" of IMPUTING or CREDITING to our ACCOUNT CHRIST'S RIGHTEOUSNESS:

When is this Accrediting to our account done? When we:

1. Repent of our sins and wholly trust in Christ's Atoning BLOOD shed on Calvary's Cross for the means of our cleansing from all sin.
2. Receive Christ as our personal Savior from our sins.
3. Believe in HIM, and welcome Him to take up His residence in our hearts.

SCRIPTURES in both THE OLD TESTAMENT and THE NEW TESTAMENT SUPPORTING THIS IMPUTATION, THIS ACCOUNTING

1. **Romans 4:3-8:**

3 For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.

4 Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works,

7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

2. **Romans 4:11: Abraham became the father of all them that believe, that RIGHTEOUSNESS might be IMPUTED unto them also.**

3. **Romans 4:20-22:**

20 He (Abraham) staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;

21 And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.

4. **Romans 4:23-25:**

**23 Now, it was not written for his sake alone, that it was IMPUTED to him;
24 but FOR US also, to whom it shall be IMPUTED, if we BELIEVE on HIM that
raised up JESUS our LORD from the dead;
25 Who was delivered for OUR OFFENCES, and was raised again for OUR
JUSTIFICATION.**

**5. James 2:23: The Scripture was fulfilled which saith: Abraham BELIEVED GOD,
and it was “IMPUTED” unto him for RIGHTEOUSNESS; and he was called THE
FRIEND of GOD.**

**6. Galatians 3:5: Even as ABRAHAM believed GOD, and it was “ACCOUNTED” to
him for RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

**7. 2 Corinthians 5:21: For HE (i.e., ALMIGHTY GOD) hath made HIM (i.e., THE
LORD JESUS CHRIST) to be SIN for us, Who knew no sin; that we might be made
the RIGHTEOUSNESS of GOD in HIM.**

**8. Isaiah 45:24: Surely, shall one say, IN THE LORD have I RIGHTEOUSNESS and
strength:**

**9. Isaiah 54:17: No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every
tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the
heritage of the servants of THE LORD. And, their RIGHTEOUSNESS is OF ME,
saith THE LORD.**

10. Jeremiah 23:5-6:

**5 Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will raise unto David a
righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute
judgment and justice in the earth.**

**6 In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his
name whereby he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

Jeremiah 33:15-16:

**15 In those days, and at that time, will I cause the Branch of righteousness to
grow up unto David; and he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the
land.**

**16 In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and
this is the name wherewith she shall be called, The LORD our righteousness.**

**11. I Corinthians 1:30: But of HIM are ye in CHRIST JESUS, Who of God is made
unto us wisdom, and RIGHTEOUSNESS, and Sanctification, and Redemption.**

12. *Isaiah 51:5-6:*

5 “MY RIGHTEOUSNESS” is near; MY SALVATION is gone forth, and on MINE ARM shall they trust.

6 My SALVATION shall be FOREVER, and MY RIGHTEOUSNESS shall not be abolished.

13. *Psalms 11:7: The RIGHTEOUS LORD loveth RIGHTEOUSNESS; His countenance doth behold the upright.*

14. *Proverbs 15:9: HE loveth him that followeth after RIGHTEOUSNESS.*

15. *Isaiah 54:14: In RIGHTEOUSNESS shalt thou be established: thou shalt be far from oppression. For thou shalt not fear; and from terror, for it shall not come near thee.*

16. *Isaiah 32:17: The work OF RIGHTEOUSNESS shall be PEACE: and the EFFECT of RIGHTEOUSNESS quietness and assurance forever.*

The WORD of GOD is Our "MANUEL" and our TEXTBOOK ON "RIGHTEOUSNESS".

(a) **2 Titus 3:16: All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for: DOCTRINE, for REPROOF, for CORRECTION, for INSTRUCTION IN RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

(b) **Hebrews 5:13: Everyone that useth milk is unskillful in THE WORD of RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

(c) **2 Peter 2:21: It had been better for them not to have known THE WAY of RIGHTEOUSNESS, than, after they have known it, to turn from the HOLY COMMANDMENT delivered unto them.**

(d) **Isaiah 28:16: THUS SAITH THE LORD GOD: Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a STONE, a tried STONE, a PRECIOUS CORNER STONE, a sure foundation.**

1 Corinthians 3:11: For other FOUNDATION can no man lay than that is laid, WHICH IS JESUS CHRIST.

1 Peter 2:6-8:

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you that believe HE is precious: but unto them which be “DISOBEDIENT”, THE STONE which the builders disallowed the same is made the HEAD of THE CORNER.

8 And a STONE of stumbling, and a ROCK of offence, even to them which STUMBLE AT THE WORD: being disobedient; whereunto also they were appointed.

(e) Isaiah 28:17a: JUDGMENT (Justice) also will I lay to the LINE, and RIGHTEOUSNESS to the PLUMMET.

What in the world is the Lord God talking about in speaking of “THE LINE” and RIGHTEOUSNESS to THE PLUMMET?”

THE WORD OF GOD is our SPIRITUAL PLUMBLINE for us to measure our lives by it, to see whether we are STRAIGHT, or CROOKED, or LEANING!!!

THE HOLY BIBLE is: OUR MORAL PLUMBLINE

(a) Text: Amos 7:7-8:

7 Thus HE showed me: and, behold, THE LORD stood upon a WALL made by a PLUMBLINE, with a PLUMBLINE in HIS HAND.

8 And, THE LORD said unto me: AMOS, what seest thou? And I said: A PLUMBLINE!!! Then said THE LORD, Behold, I will set a PLUMBLINE in the "MIDST" of MY PEOPLE . . .

(b) Zechariah 4:10: For who hath despised the day of small things? For they shall rejoice and see THE PLUMMET in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of THE LORD, which run to and fro through THE WHOLE EARTH.

(c) Isaiah 28:17: JUSTICE will I lay to THE LINE, and RIGHTEOUSNESS to the PLUMMET.

(d) Isaiah 49:22: Thus saith THE LORD GOD: Behold, I will lift up Mine hand to the Gentiles, and SET UP MY STANDARD to the people.

(e) Isaiah 62:10: Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye THE WAY of the people; cast up, cast up the Highway; gather out the stones; LIFT UP A STANDARD for THE PEOPLE.

PLUMBLINE or PLUMMET DEFINED

This is a very important device or instrument that is very simple in its construction. It is a heavy, cone-shaped object which resembles a top. It has a cap that screws on to the top of the instrument with a hole in the middle. Into this a long, tough cord is placed; then a knot is tied on the end of the cord so it will not slip out. Then the mason, carpenter, or construction worker will be elevated high into the air, and he places this PLUMBLINE beside a GUIDE POLE to test its STRAIGHTNESS. When it is in the proper position, then that pole is secured. This is the GUIDE to determine whether the wall of the building under construction is straight, or bowing, or bending, or leaning.



APPLICATION:

The Lord calls Amos, His prophet, and asks him what he is seeing? Amos responds, “***I see a PLUMB LINE.***” Then God points out the PURPOSE of this vision. God Himself is at the TOP of THIS WALL. He has THE PLUMB-BOB and the PLUMBLINE in HIS HAND. HE lets it drop down to the ground in the “***MIDST***” of ***MY PEOPLE***, The Lord says.

INTERPRETED:

The LORD interprets this PLUMBLINE or PLUMMET as THE PLUMMET OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. THE LORD HIMSELF is setting it right in the very MIDST of HIS PEOPLE. HE is using THIS RIGHTEOUSNESS STANDARD for us to see whether we are STRAIGHT or CROOKED, whether we are UPRIGHT or LEANING towards SIN, SATAN, or SELF.

This is what THE BIBLE SAYS:

1. ***Psalm 15:1-3:***

1 LORD, who shall abide in THY TABERNACLE? Who shall dwell in THY HOLY HILL?

Answer:

2 He that walketh UPRIGHTLY, and WORKETH RIGHTEOUSNESS, and speaketh the truth in his heart.

3 He that backbiteth NOT with his tongue, nor doeth evil to his neighbor, nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbor.

2. ***Psalm 23:3: He restoreth my soul, HE leadeth me in the Paths of RIGHTEOUSNESS for His Name's sake.***

Proverbs 8:20: I lead in the Way of RIGHTEOUSNESS.

3. **Psalm 106:3: Blessed are they that DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS at all times.**
4. **Psalm 132:9: Let Thy Priests be clothed with RIGHTEOUSNESS: and let Thy saints shout for joy.**

5. **Ezekiel 3:20-21:**

20 When a RIGHTEOUS MAN DOTH TURN FROM HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS, and commit iniquity, he shall die in his sin, and his RIGHTEOUSNESS which he hath done shall not be remembered; but his blood will I require at thine hand.
21 Nevertheless, if thou WARN the RIGHTEOUS, that the RIGHTEOUS SIN NOT, and he doth not sin, he shall surely live. And, thou hast delivered thy soul.

Ezekiel 18:24-26:

24 But when the righteous turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and doeth according to all the abominations that the wicked man doeth, shall he live? All his righteousness that he hath done shall not be mentioned: in his trespass that he hath trespassed, and in his sin that he hath sinned, in them shall he die.
25 Yet ye say, The way of the Lord is not equal. Hear now, O house of Israel; Is not my way equal? are not your ways unequal?
26 When a righteous man turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and dieth in them; for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die.

6. **Hosea 10:12: Sow to yourselves in RIGHTEOUSNESS, reap in mercy; break up the fallow ground; (i.e., of your hearts) for it is TIME to seek The Lord, till He come and rain RIGHTEOUSNESS UPON YOU.**

7. **Matthew 6:33: But seek ye FIRST The Kingdom of God and HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS, and all these things shall be added unto you.**

8. **Luke 1:73-75:**

73 The Oath (i.e., Pledge) which God swore to our father Abraham,
74 that He would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve HIM without fear,
75 IN HOLINESS and RIGHTEOUSNESS before HIM, all the days of our life.

9. **Acts 10:35: In every nation, he that feareth God, and WORKETH RIGHTEOUSNESS is accepted of HIM.**

10. COMMANDMENT:

Romans 6:13: Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto SIN: but YIELD yourselves unto GOD, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of RIGHTEOUSNESS unto God.

11. ***Romans 6:14-16:***

14 SIN shall not have dominion over you; for ye are not under The Law, but under Grace.

15 What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under The Law, but under Grace? GOD FORBID!!

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto RIGHTEOUSNESS.

12. ***Romans 6:19b: Even so NOW YIELD YOUR MEMBERS SERVANTS TO RIGHTEOUSNESS unto HOLINESS.***

13. ***Romans 10:10: For with the HEART man believeth unto RIGHTEOUSNESS; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.***

14. ***I Corinthians 15:34: AWAKE TO RIGHTEOUSNESS!!! and SIN NOT!!!! for some have not the knowledge of God, I speak this to your shame.***

15. COMMANDMENT!!!

2 Corinthians 6:14: Be ye NOT UNEQUALLY YOKED together with unbelievers. For, what fellowship hath RIGHTEOUSNESS with unrighteousness? What communion hath light with darkness?

16. ***Ephesians 5:9: The Fruit of THE SPIRIT is in all goodness and RIGHTEOUSNESS and truth.***

17. ***Philippians 1:11: Being filled with the FRUITS of RIGHTEOUSNESS, which are by JESUS CHRIST, unto the glory and praise of God.***

18. ***I Timothy 1:9: Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,***

19. ***I Timothy 6:11: Thou, O man of God, follow after RIGHTEOUSNESS, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.***

20. **Titus 2:11-12:**
11 For the GRACE OF GOD that bringeth SALVATION hath appeared to all mankind,
12 teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, WE SHOULD LIVE SOBERLY, RIGHTEOUSLY, and GODLY in this present world.
21. **James 3:18: The FRUIT of RIGHTEOUSNESS is sown in peace of them that make peace.**
22. **James 5:16: The effectual prayer of a RIGHTEOUS MAN availeth much.**
23. **1 Peter 2:24: CHRIST bare our sins in His own body on the Tree (Cross) that we, being dead to sins, should live unto RIGHTEOUSNESS: by Whose stripes ye were healed.**
24. **1 Peter 3:12: The eyes of THE LORD are over the RIGHTEOUS, AND His ears are open to their prayers: but The Face of The Lord is against them that DO EVIL.**
25. **2 Peter 2:5: NOAH, the eighth person, a PREACHER of RIGHTEOUSNESS . . .**
26. **2 Peter 2:7-8:**
7 And delivered just LOT, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked;
8 (For that RIGHTEOUS MAN dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his RIGHTEOUS SOUL from day to day with their unlawful deeds:).
27. **1 John 2:29: If we know that HE (i.e., THE LORD) is RIGHTEOUS, ye know that everyone that DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS is born of HIM.**
28. **1 John 3:10: Whosoever doeth NOT RIGHTEOUSNESS is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.**
29. **Revelation 19:8: Let us rejoice and give honor to HIM: for the Marriage of THE LAMB is come, and His wife (The Bride of Christ, The Church) hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white, for the fine linen is THE RIGHTEOUSNESS of SAINTS.**
30. **Revelation 22:10-12:**
10 And he saith unto me, seal not the sayings of the Prophecy of THIS BOOK: for the TIME is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still; and he that is RIGHTEOUS, let him be RIGHTEOUS still; and he that is HOLY, let him be HOLY STILL.

12 And, behold, I come quickly; and My REWARD is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

WHEW!!! HEY PREACHER!!! When is this EVER GOING TO END? Beloved!!! This is GOD ALMIGHTY'S PLUMBLINE which HE has set down right in the MIDST of HIS PEOPLE. I can't water it down, nor TRIM anything out that GOD PUT IN THIS BIBLE. The HOLY GHOST is a PLUMBLINE PREACHER, and I just like to hear what HE has to say. Don't you feel that way, too?

ILLUSTRATION:

We had in our church a dear HOLINESS brother by the name of George Clart. He would frequently come to our church during the week to PRAY. Our church was located right up town on the main street. He'd knock on my STUDY window, and we'd let him in. No words were exchanged between us, for he'd go right into PRAYING DOWN THE POWER OF GOD on THAT SANCTUARY. We'd have an old fashioned HO-DOWN, as THE GLORY began to fall. It was refreshing to have that kind of HOLINESS SAINTS in our assembly.

One day he invited us to come to their home. It was in the afternoon when we arrived. We had a good time fellowshiping in THE LORD. We were rejoicing in THE LORD, shouting His high praises, and blessing His wonderful Name when, all of a sudden, brother George began to have a heaving spell. His wife said: "George, you'd better get up and hurry out the back door to the garage. She knew what was wrong. Then she explained it to the rest of us who had gathered together there in the living room: "Whenever somebody is coming up to our house who is living in sin, he will have one of these vomiting spells." That dear brother was living HIGH in HOLINESS!!! HIGHEST IN RIGHTEOUSNESS!!!

Then sure enough, there was a knock at the front door. Sister Clart answered the knock and in came this man whom she knew by name. He asked if brother George was in the house? She said: No, he is not here in the house. The man seemed very disappointed and said: I've come all this way to see him. This man attended the Bethesda Missionary Temple, an Assembly of God church on the east side of Detroit, Michigan. He was a big shot in that church. All of a sudden, sister Klein, a dear Jewish sister in Christ, began to speak: "*Thus SAITH THE LORD!!!! Behold, the man who has just entered this home is defiled and unclean. He has been living in SECRET SINS.*" Then she began to name 5 or 6 of them.

That man fell on his face on the floor and began weeping uncontrollably. He repented and came clean with God. He thanked all of us for helping him to pray through to VICTORY, then got up and left. Then sister Clart told us that she was going out to the garage and get her husband. He was just coming out of the garage as she met him, and told him what had happened. He said: "I knew that. About two minutes ago the heaving stopped and left my stomach." She then told him why and how that man got a HOLY GHOST REPROVING for DABBING IN SIN. The man also did apologize to the group for defiling their home with his uncleanness.

When THE LORD told AMOS, ***I'm setting THE PLUMBLINE in the midst of My people, and I will spare them no longer,*** that is exactly what the Lord did in the home of brother and sister Clart.

The LORD JESUS laid the MORAL PLUMBLINE DOWN before the man who came to the Pool of Bethesda and was made whole again. He said unto him: ***John 5:14: Go thy way and SIN NO MORE, lest a WORSE THING come unto thee.***

Then a few days later, a woman who was caught in the very act of committing adultery was brought before HIM. The Lord Jesus forgave her, and instructed her in like manner saying: ***John 8:11: Neither do I condemn thee, go and SIN NO MORE.***

As you can readily see, our Lord Jesus LOVES RIGHTEOUSNESS and He hates sin, and that is why The Lord God anointed Him with that special anointing above all others:

Hebrews 1:9: Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

The apostle Paul laid God's BIBLE PLUMBLINE down on the Roman Governor, FELIX. As he reasoned with him of "RIGHTEOUSNESS", of TEMPERANCE, and of JUDGMENT TO COME, Felix trembled.

Acts 24:25: And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

This man of God remembered what The Lord said in ***Isaiah 28:17: Justice will I lay to the LINE: and RIGHTEOUSNESS to the PLUMMET.***

STANDARDS ARE IMPORTANT, and God wants us to LIFT THEM UP FOR HIS PEOPLE.

Isaiah 62:10: Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people.

You who are made partakers of the DIVINE NATURE will love PLUMBLINE Preaching and Teaching. It is our HOPE and PRAYER that this message IS WHETTING or STIMULATING your spiritual appetite to HUNGER AND THIRST AFTER RIGHTEOUSNESS.

To those of you who have already PUT OFF THE OLD MAN and PUT ON THE NEW MAN CREATED IN RIGHTEOUSNESS and TRUE HOLINESS, may this message stir and strengthen you to go even DEEPER into PERFECTING HOLINESS in the fear of the Lord.

2 Corinthians 7:1: Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

Remember our TEXT: ***Blessed are they which “DO”*** (not did or will do; but “DO”) ***Hunger and Thirst after RIGHTEOUSNESS, for they SHALL BE FILLED.***

Filled with what?

Filled with THAT for which they have been HUNGERING and THIRSTING, namely: RIGHTEOUSNESS.

As we have already mentioned in the introduction to this message, HUNGER and THIRST are two of the most POWERFUL URGES and CRAVINGS in the physical realm. When it shifts up to the SPIRITUAL REALM where our BLESSED LORD JESUS is directing it to, then we are prime candidates for THE FILLING. Then we're ready to receive THE BLESSING which accompanies THIS HUNGERING and THIRSTING after RIGHTEOUSNESS.

ADMONITION: DON'T SPOIL YOUR APPETITE FOR REAL RIGHTEOUSNESS!!!

HOW? By retaining a generous portion of self-righteousness. The Holy Spirit tells us in ***Isaiah 64:6a*** that: ***ALL OUR RIGHTEOUSNESSES are as “filthy rags”***. That is not very complimentary, but it is the TRUTH or HE would not have said so. This sorry self-made brand of righteousness has prevented many from obtaining the REAL and GENUINE kind which BLESSES US and everybody else besides.

SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS:

The Lord Jesus describes this kind of righteousness which is full of pride and vanity. It is that “filthy rags” kind, and here is how The Lord Jesus describes it in His Parable recorded in **Luke 18:9-13**:

9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

13 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

APPLICATION: The Lord Jesus now says:

Luke 18:14: I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

Matthew 5:20: For I say unto you, that except your RIGHTEOUSNESS shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into The Kingdom of Heaven.

This is a Generation of unbelievers who are REJECTING GOD'S STANDARD of RIGHTEOUSNESS and are going about to establish a righteousness of their own. Their MORALITY standards are very flexible and in harmony with whatever the population desires. This manner of Morality is as old as the hills. If we would go to the Old Testament and take a closer look at **Judges 18:7, or 17:6, or 21:25**, this is what is said:

Judges 18:7: There was no Magistrate in the land, that might PUT THEM TO SHAME in anything.

Judges 17:6: In those days there was no king in Israel, but everyone did that which was RIGHT IN HIS OWN EYES.

Judges 21:25: In those days there was no king in Israel: every man did that which was right in his own eyes.

Proverbs 14:12: There is A WAY which seemeth right unto a man, but THE END thereof are the WAYS of DEATH.

Now you can see why The Lord God gave unto Amos that VISION of Himself standing on the top of A WALL with a PLUMBLINE in HIS HAND. Then HE asked Amos: **WHAT DO YOU SEE?** His answer: **A PLUMBLINE:**

Amos 7:7-9:

7 Thus he shewed me: and, behold, the Lord stood upon a wall made by a plumbline, with a plumbline in his hand.

8 And the LORD said unto me, Amos, what seest thou? And I said, A plumbline. Then said the Lord, Behold, I will set a plumbline in the midst of my people Israel: I will not again pass by them any more:

9 And the high places of Isaac shall be desolate, and the sanctuaries of Israel shall be laid waste; and I will rise against the house of Jeroboam with the sword.

Listen to the apostle Paul's tender and compassionate message to the children of Israel:

Romans 10:1-4:

1 Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is: THAT THEY MIGHT BE SAVED.

2 For, I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they BEING IGNORANT of GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS, and going about to establish their own RIGHTEOUSNESS, HAVE NOT SUBMITTED themselves unto THE RIGHTEOUSNESS of GOD.

4 For CHRIST is the end of The Law for RIGHTEOUSNESS to everyone that believeth.

Romans 10:10: For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

The Fact that God commands us to SEEK RIGHTEOUSNESS in **Zephaniah 2:3**, He would not tell us to seek for what we cannot find or obtain.

Zephaniah 2:3: Seek ye the LORD, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought his judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD'S anger.

The first stage is IMPUTED RIGHTEOUSNESS, as we have already expounded upon earlier in this discourse

Romans 6:12-14:

12 Let NOT SIN therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto SIN: but YIELD yourselves unto God, as those who are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of RIGHTEOUSNESS unto God.

14 For SIN SHALL NOT HAVE DOMINION over you, for ye are not under the Law, but under GRACE.

Romans 6:15-16:

15 What then? Shall we SIN, because we are not Under The Law, but under Grace? GOD FORBID!!!!

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye OBEY? Whether of SIN unto DEATH, or of OBEDIENCE unto RIGHTEOUSNESS.

Romans 6:17-18:

17 But GOD BE THANKED, that ye "WERE" the servants of sin, but ye have OBEYED from the heart that form of Doctrine which was delivered you.

18 BEING THEN MADE "FREE" from sin (not when we die, but NOW as verse 22 declares) ye became the servants of RIGHTEOUSNESS.

WHAT IS THE DEFINITION OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, SECULAR OR BIBLICAL?

1. Webster's Dictionary: *Upright, virtuous, morally right.*
2. New Century: *Obedient to Moral Laws, morally right.*
3. Thorndike-Barnhart Desk Dictionary: *Doing right; behaving justly; morally right.*
4. Funk & Wagnalls New Desk Dictionary: *Conforming in disposition and conduct to a Standard of Right and Justice.*
5. Pictorial Bible Dictionary (M. Tenny): *The act of making things right.*
6. Douglas New Bible Dictionary: *Right action in fair dealing between human beings.*
7. THE HOLY BIBLE'S DEFINITION:

The Lord uses people as examples or illustrations:

Luke 1:6: And they (Elizabeth and Zacharias), were both RIGHTEOUS before God, walking in all the Commandments and Ordinances of THE LORD blameless.

Genesis 7:1: The Lord said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark, for thee have I seen RIGHTEOUS before ME in this generation.

Ezekiel 14:14: Though these three men NOAH, DANIEL, and JOB were in it, they should deliver their own souls by THEIR RIGHTEOUSNESS, saith The Lord.

1 Peter 3:12: For the eyes of the Lord are over the RIGHTEOUS and His ears are open to their prayers; but the face of The Lord is against them that do evil.

Psalms 32:11: Be glad in the Lord, and rejoice, ye RIGHTEOUS: and shout for joy, ALL YE UPRIGHT in heart.

Psalms 34:15: The RIGHTEOUS CRY, and the LORD heareth, and delivereth them out of all their troubles.

Luke 1:74-75:

**74 That HE would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies, might SERVE HIM without fear,
75 in HOLINESS and RIGHTEOUSNESS before HIM, all the days of our life.**

Matthew 5:6: Blessed are they which DO HUNGER and THIRST after RIGHTEOUSNESS, for THEY SHALL BE FILLED.

(Literally filled with that righteousness — that very righteousness for which they're hungry and thirsting. If this were not the FACT, then their hungry and thirsting would not be BLESSED of the LORD and would not be quenched or satisfied.)

Why are we calling these things to your attention?

If we were to ask you, as we have some others: ARE YOU RIGHTEOUS? How would you answer? This is how some others have responded: Who ME? Oooohhh, NO! Don't you know, preacher that there is NONE RIGHTEOUS, no one. The Bible says so in **Romans 3:10: As it is written: There is none righteous, no, not one.**

Then we ask them: Have you read carefully the CONTEXT in which that verse is recorded? What does it say?

Most of them will say, "Well, I've likely read it, but I don't remember what it says". It is very important to know the surrounding verses in order to gain the correct interpretation of this **tenth verse**. Those verses have reference to our unregenerated state — the state we are in before we are saved from our sins. It has reference to what we were before the PRECIOUS BLOOD OF CHRIST was applied to our hearts as GOD'S DIVINE REMEDY FOR SIN.

1 John 1:9: If we confess our sins, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and TO CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.

1 John 1:7: If we walk in the light as HE is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the BLOOD of Jesus Christ, God's Son, CLEANSETH us from ALL SIN.

Titus 2:11-14:

11 For THE GRACE of God that bringeth SALVATION, hath appeared to all men, 12 teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, WE SHOULD LIVE SOBERLY, RIGHTEOUSLY and GODLY in this present world;

13 Looking for that Blessed Hope, and the glorious appearing of the Great God and our Savior JESUS CHRIST;

14 Who gave Himself for us, that HE might REDEEM US FROM ALL INIQUITY, AND PURIFY unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

2 Timothy 2:19: Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are His. And, LET EVERYONE that nameth the Name of CHRIST DEPART FROM INIQUITY.

Romans 6:1-2:

1 What shall we say then? Shall we CONTINUE in sin that GRACE MAY ABOUND?

2 GOD FORBID!!! How shall we, that are DEAD TO SIN, live any longer therein?

Romans 6:6: Knowing this, that our OLD MAN is crucified with HIM, that the Body of Sin might be destroyed, that henceforth (from now on) WE SHOULD NOT SERVE SIN.

Ephesians 4:22, 24:

22 That ye PUT OFF concerning the former conversation THE OLD MAN, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts.

24 And that ye PUT ON THE NEW MAN, which is CREATED in RIGHTEOUSNESS and TRUE HOLINESS.

Colossians 3:8-10:

8 Now PUT OFF all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have PUT OFF THE OLD MAN with his deeds;

10 and have PUT ON THE NEW MAN which is renewed in knowledge after the image of Him that created him.

When The Lord Jesus pronounced a BLESSING on those who HUNGER and THIRST after RIGHTEOUSNESS, what does this HUNGERING and THIRSTING imply? It means A DESIRE TO BE FREE FROM SIN, because:

1. SIN SEPARATES us from God. See **Exodus 33:7-8; Isaiah 59:1-2; Deuteronomy 23:10-11 and 14; 31:17; Joshua 7:11-12; Judges 16:20; I Samuel 16:14; I Chronicles 28:9; 2 Chronicles 15:2** which follow:

Exodus 33:7-8:

7 And Moses took the tabernacle, and pitched it without the camp, afar off from the camp, and called it the Tabernacle of the congregation. And it came to pass, that every one which sought the LORD went out unto the tabernacle of the congregation, which was without the camp.

8 And it came to pass, when Moses went out unto the tabernacle, that all the people rose up, and stood every man at his tent door, and looked after Moses, until he was gone into the tabernacle.

Isaiah 59:1-2:

1 Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear:

2 But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

Deuteronomy 23:10-11,14:

10 If there be among you any man, that is not clean by reason of uncleanness that chanceth him by night, then shall he go abroad out of the camp, he shall not come within the camp:

11 But it shall be, when evening cometh on, he shall wash himself with water: and when the sun is down, he shall come into the camp again.

14 For the LORD thy God walketh in the midst of thy camp, to deliver thee, and to give up thine enemies before thee; therefore shall thy camp be holy: that he see no unclean thing in thee, and turn away from thee.

Deuteronomy 31:17: *Then my anger shall be kindled against them in that day, and I will forsake them, and I will hide my face from them, and they shall be devoured, and many evils and troubles shall befall them; so that they will say in that day, Are not these evils come upon us, because our God is not among us?*

Joshua 7:11-12:

11 *Israel hath sinned, and they have also transgressed my covenant which I commanded them: for they have even taken of the accursed thing, and have also stolen, and dissembled also, and they have put it even among their own stuff.*
12 *Therefore the children of Israel could not stand before their enemies, but turned their backs before their enemies, because they were accursed: neither will I be with you any more, except ye destroy the accursed from among you.*

Judges 16:20: *And she said, The Philistines be upon thee, Samson. And he awoke out of his sleep, and said, I will go out as at other times before, and shake myself. And he wist not that the LORD was departed from him.*

1 Samuel 16:14: *But the Spirit of the LORD departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from the LORD troubled him.*

1 Chronicles 28:9: *And thou, Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father, and serve him with a perfect heart and with a willing mind: for the LORD searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek him, he will be found of thee; but if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off for ever.*

2 Chronicles 15:2: *And he went out to meet Asa, and said unto him, Hear ye me, Asa, and all Judah and Benjamin; The LORD is with you, while ye be with him; and if ye seek him, he will be found of you; but if ye forsake him, he will forsake you.*

2. Sinning brings us into BONDAGE.

Romans 6:17: *But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.*

Romans 7:23-25:

23 *But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.*
24 *O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?*
25 *I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.*

Romans 8:1-4:

1 There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:

4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

Ezekiel 39:23: And the heathen shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they trespassed against me, therefore hid I my face from them, and gave them into the hand of their enemies: so fell they all by the sword.

This HUNGERING and THIRSTING after RIGHTEOUSNESS is our yearning to be FREE FROM SIN and its power to dominate us. Then this desire deepens to the point that we want to get rid of the VERY DESIRES for sinful pleasures. This DESIRE and LONGING is not wishful thinking. It can be a REALITY. Those references in **Romans 6:1-22** will confirm this:

Romans 6:1-22:

1 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?

2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

John 8:31-36:

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

Galatians 2:4: And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

Galatians 5:1-2:

1 Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

Galatians 5:13: For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

1 Peter 2:16: As free, and not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.

1 Peter 4:1: Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin;

1 John 3:6-10:

6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

1 John 5:18: We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

QUESTION: How many of you have ever heard a teacher or preacher announce as their TOPIC: HOW TO BE EMPTIED? How many would respond to come and hear such a sermon or Bible study?

Most of us have heard messages on: HOW TO BE SPIRIT-FILLED. But in order to be filled, we must be EMPTIED of all self-righteousness, self-seeking, self-sufficiency, self-importance, and self-assertiveness. You see, there needs to be an EMPTYING before there can come the COMPLETE FILLING.

This EMPTYING STARTS OUT with being POOR IN SPIRIT, THEN MOURNING over our helplessness and insufficiency. It is a very HUMBLING experience, but it greatly

helps the heart to enter into MEEKNESS. Then the meek, who have become emptied of all SELF, take on SUCH A HUNGERING and THIRSTING after RIGHTEOUSNESS.

You already know, ladies, that it is hard to get the members of the family to the TABLE for that nice meal you have prepared if they are not HUNGRY or THIRSTY. The HUNGRIER and THIRSTIER they are, you know from experience that it will take a whole lot to FILL THEM UP. The very scent of FOOD will make their mouths water.

LISTEN TO GOD'S INVITATION TO THE THIRSTY

1. **Isaiah 55:1-2:**

1 Everyone that THIRSTETH, come ye to the Waters. He that hath NO MONEY; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come buy wine and milk without money and without price.

2 Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not Bread? And your labor for that which satisfieth not? Hearken diligently unto ME, and EAT ye that which is GOOD, and let your soul delight itself in fatness.

2. **Psalm 63:1-2:**

1 O God, thou art my God; early will I seek thee: my soul thirsteth for thee, my flesh longeth for thee in a dry and thirsty land, where no water is;

2 To see thy power and thy glory, so as I have seen thee in the sanctuary.

3. **Psalm 42:1: As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after thee, O God.**

4. **Psalm 143:6b: My soul THIRSTETH FOR THEE, as a thirsty land.**

5. **Isaiah 44:3: GOD SAID: I will POUR (not a drip, drop, but POUR) WATER and FLOODS on him that is THIRSTY, on the DRY GROUND: I will POUR MY SPIRIT upon thy seed, and MY BLESSING upon thine offspring.**

6. **John 7:37: In That Last Great Day of THE FEAST, JESUS stood and cried: saying: If ANYONE THIRST, let him come unto ME, and DRINK.**

7. **Revelation 22:17: The SPIRIT and The Bride say: COME. And let him that heareth say COME! And let him that is ATHIRST COME. And Whosoever will, let him take THE WATER OF LIFE FREELY.**

THERE IS BUT ONE STIPULATION: The only way to qualify to these invitations is: JUST BE THIRSTY and HUNGRY. THAT'S ALL.

Do you qualify? I surely hope and pray it is so!

IN CONCLUSION:

May we present to you, in this closing page, a remarkable way in which THE LORD "WHETS" or STIMULATES our APPETITE for RIGHTEOUSNESS? Take notice as to HOW HE motivates us to diligently seek and we shall find.

1. ***Psalm 5:12: THOU LORD, wilt BLESS THE RIGHTEOUS; with favor wilt Thou compass him as with a shield.***
2. ***Psalm 34:15: The eyes of THE LORD are over the RIGHTEOUS, and His ears are open to their cry.***
3. ***Matthew 10:41: He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a RIGHTEOUS man in the name of a RIGHTEOUS man shall receive a RIGHTEOUS man's reward.***
4. ***Hebrews 1:9: Thou hast LOVED RIGHTEOUSNESS and hated iniquity, therefore GOD, even thy God hath ANOINTED THEE with the oil of GLADNESS above thy fellows.***
- Psalm 45:7: Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.***
5. ***I Peter 2:24: Who His own self bare our sins in His own body on the tree, that we being dead to sins, should live unto RIGHTEOUSNESS, by Whose stripes YE WERE HEALED.***
6. ***Proverbs 13:6a: RIGHTEOUSNESS keepeth him that is UPRIGHT in THE WAY.***
7. ***Proverbs 21:21: He that followeth after RIGHTEOUSNESS and Mercy findeth LIFE, RIGHTEOUSNESS, and HONOR.***
8. ***Proverbs 29:2: When THE RIGHTEOUS are in authority, then the people rejoice; but when the wicked bear rule, the people mourn.***
9. ***Isaiah 32:17: The work of RIGHTEOUSNESS shall be PEACE: and the effect of RIGHTEOUSNESS quietness and assurance forever.***
10. ***Isaiah 33:15-16:***

15 He that WALKETH RIGHTEOUSLY, and speaketh uprightly; he that despiseth the gain of oppressions, that shaketh his hands from holding of bribes, that stoppeth his ears from hearing of blood, and shutteth his eyes from seeing evil;

16 He shall dwell on high: his place of defence shall be the munitions of rocks: bread shall be given him; his waters shall be sure.

11. Matthew 5:10: Blessed are they which are persecuted FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE; for theirs is THE KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

12. 2 Samuel 22:21: The LORD "rewarded" me according to my RIGHTEOUSNESS: according to the cleanness of my hands hath HE "recompensed" me.

2 Samuel 22:25: Therefore the LORD hath recompensed me, according to my righteousness; according to my cleanness in his eye sight.

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST SAID: BLESSED are they which "DO" HUNGER and THIRST after RIGHTEOUSNESS, for THEY SHALL BE FILLED, FILLED, FILLED, FILLED. MY RESPONSE: I'm a candidate LORD, FILL ME UP TO THE BRIM!!!!

Do I hear any: "I second it? Third it? Etc."?

This is "HOW TO" enter into the HAPPY and BLESSED LIFE!!!

CLASS HOMEWORK: THE BEATITUDES
LESSON FOUR: HOW TO ENTER INTO A HAPPY AND BLESSED LIFE

1. Give two evidences that we are truly born again according to your study guide.
2. _____ and thirst for _____ is a good sign of our _____ health and well-being.
3. What is one healthy sign of the new birth experience? (What will they do when they commit sin?)
4. Write out Proverbs 6:16-19.
5. What does living in reproach mean?
6. What are the 5 Divine Objectives in our salvation?
7. Define impute and explain imputed righteousness.
8. How did Abraham obtain imputed righteousness? (Romans 4:20-22)
9. And the work _____ shall be _____ and the effect of _____ quietness and assurance forever. (Isaiah 32:17)
10. What is the interpretation of Isaiah 28:17 according to your study guide?
11. Select two of your favorite scriptures from the list found on pages 98-102 of your study guide and write them out.
12. Hunger and thirst are two of the most _____ and cravings in the physical realm. When it shifts up to the spiritual realm, where our blessed Lord Jesus is directing it, then we are prime candidates for the _____.
13. What spoils our appetite for real righteousness?
14. What is God's "command" in Zephaniah 2:3?
15. Write out Ephesians 4:22-24. Whose responsibility is it to put off the old man and put on the new man?
16. To whom are we servants, according to Romans 6:17-18?
17. What two major things does sin do according to your study guide?
18. List 5 ways the Lord whets our appetite for righteousness.

Lesson: #5
HERE IS HOW TO LIVE THE HAPPY LIFE

Text: **Matthew 5:7: BLESSED are the MERCIFUL, for they shall obtain MERCY.**

Introduction: The character and nature of a truly HAPPY CHRISTIAN is revealed in these NINE BLESSEDS which THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, The Head of The Church, is declaring unto us, His Kingdom People. HAPPINESS makes for a sweet person to have around us. HAPPINESS keeps us sweet in our conversation and conduct. The Lord Jesus wants us to be a HAPPY, HOLY CHURCH. CHRISTIANS, living the BLESSED LIFE, should be the HAPPIEST people on the earth.

QUESTION: Do you remember the definition which we gave in the first lesson on the meaning of "BLESSED"?

ANSWER:

- (a) Happiness at its highest level
- (b) Happiness in its noblest form
- (c) Happiness derived from Holiness of Heart

Did you pay close attention as to WHERE The Lord Jesus Christ places MERCY in these nine Beatitudes?

It is placed between RIGHTEOUSNESS and PURITY. This was not done by accident, but by DESIGN and PURPOSE, for MERCY is a natural by product of a Righteous and a Pure heart.

Psalm 37:21: The wicked borroweth, and payeth not again: but the RIGHTEOUS showeth MERCY and giveth.

Psalm 37:25-26:

25 I have been young, and now am old; yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread.

26 He is ever MERCIFUL, and lendeth; and his seed is BLESSED.

Proverbs 21:21: He that followeth after righteousness and MERCY findeth life, righteousness, and honor.

QUESTION: What is the DEFINITION of "MERCY"?

- A. Webster's Dictionary: *Restraint from punishing offenders; forbearing with compassion those who have done wrong or committed a crime; showing pity and a willingness to forgive; to be kind.*
- B. New Century Dictionary: *Showing clemency and leniency towards an offender or an enemy.*
- C. Funk & Wagnalls Desk Dictionary: *An act of treating an offender with less severity than they deserve. Showing kindness, pity, tenderheartedness.*
- D. Thorndike-Barnhart Desk Dictionary: *Showing more kindness than justice requires. Kindness received beyond what could be expected by the offending party.*
- E. Douglas New Bible Dictionary: *Mercy and Merciful when translated from Hebrew or Greek root words; sets forth kindness, grace, and favor.*
- F. Pictorial Bible Dictionary by M. Tenny:

Hebrew: Hesed — kindness
 Hanan — gracious
 -
 Greek: Eleos — kindness
 Loktermos — compassion

*Forbearance from inflicting punishment upon an adversary or a law breaker.
 Compassion which causes one to help the weak, or the sickly, or the poor.*

It is one of the Cardinal Virtues of the true Christian. It will determine God's treatment of us.

James 2:1-4:

- 1 My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.**
- 2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment;**
- 3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool.**
- 4 Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?**

God's MERCY towards us who were sinners was clearly shown at Calvary when Christ died for our sins as a willing SACRIFICE.

Romans 5:8: God commendeth His Love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners CHRIST DIED FOR US.

Titus 3:5: Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His MERCY HE saved us, by the washing of regeneration and renewing of The Holy Ghost.

I Peter 1:3-5:

3 Blessed be The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to His ABUNDANT MERCY hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in Heaven for you,

5 Who are kept by THE POWER of GOD, through faith, unto salvation ready to be revealed in THE LAST TIME.

I. GOD'S "MERCY" FIRST REVEALED to MANKIND in PROVIDING THE SAVIOUR FOR US

There are nearly 400 Scriptural references in the Bible on the subject of MERCY. Over half of these references direct our attention to GOD ALMIGHTY as the True Source of MERCY. This is one of His supernatural attributes. Those three references which we have just shared with you are a case in point. They direct our attention to this FACT. Who best could call this to our attention like THE LORD JESUS CHRIST?

Matthew 9:11-13:

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, He said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Hebrews 2:17: Wherefore, in all things (in every respect) it behooved (was essential for) CHRIST to be made like unto His brethren, that HE might be a MERCIFUL and FAITHFUL HIGH PRIEST in things relating to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

Jude 21: Keep yourselves in the Love of God, looking for the MERCY of our LORD JESUS CHRIST unto Eternal Life.

Luke 1:76-79:

76 And thou, child (i.e., John The Baptist), shalt be called the prophet of The Highest: for thou shalt go before THE FACE OF THE LORD to prepare HIS WAYS;

77 to give knowledge of SALVATION unto His people by the remission of their sins,

78 Through the TENDER MERCY of our GOD; whereby THE DAYSPRING (THE LORD JESUS CHRIST) from on High hath visited us,

79 to give LIGHT to them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet in the WAY of peace.

Luke 2:10-11:

10 The angel said unto them, Fear not; for, behold I bring you good tidings of GREAT JOY, which shall be to ALL PEOPLE.

11 For unto YOU is born this day in the City of David A SAVIOUR, which is CHRIST THE LORD.

Ephesians 2:2-6:

2 Wherein, in time past ye walked according to the course of this world according to the prince of the power of the air, the Spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:

3 among whom also WE ALL had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

4 BUT GOD, WHO IS RICH IN MERCY, for HIS GREAT LOVE wherewith HE LOVED US,

5 even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened (i.e., made us alive spiritually) us together with CHRIST, (by grace ye are saved;)

6 and hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in Heavenly places in CHRIST JESUS.

II. MERCY AND GRACE ARE UNITED FOR SALVATION

A. MERCY has its ROOTS IN KINDNESS and GRACIOUSNESS.

- Psalm 117:2: For his merciful kindness is great toward us: and the truth of the LORD endureth for ever. Praise ye the LORD.**
- Psalm 119:76: Let, I pray thee, thy merciful kindness be for my comfort, according to thy word unto thy servant.**

- ***Isaiah 54:8: In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the LORD thy Redeemer.***

However MERCY is NOT GRACE. Mercy looks upon the consequences of sin, whereas grace looks with compassion on the miseries caused by sin and desires to help that person get out of their mess. Yet, mercy is not grace, and here is what the Scriptures have to say about that:

- ***1 Timothy 1:2: Unto Timothy, my own son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.***
- ***2 Timothy 1:2: To Timothy, my dearly beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.***
- ***Titus 1:4: To Titus, mine own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.***
- ***2 John 1:3: Grace be with you, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.***

The Holy Spirit places them side by side, thus revealing they are a part of each other, but they are different in the manner of their manifestations.

B. GRACE has its roots in kindness and favor undeserved by the sinner, but looks on the sinner with a longing to restore him or her back into fellowship with God.

- GRACE puts the Good Samaritan on the track to rescue the man who fell among thieves and was left half dead.
- Mercy binds up his wounds pouring in the wine and oil, and is motivated by pity and compassion to relieve his miseries.

In **Luke 10:25-37**, after The Lord Jesus gave this Parable, HE asked the Lawyer this question: ***Which now of the three, thinkest thou, was neighbor unto him that fell among the thieves?*** The Lawyer's answer: ***He that showed MERCY on him.*** ***The Lord Jesus then said unto him, GO, and DO thou likewise.***

We gave you about nine Scriptures showing how MERCY is related to SALVATION. Now we would like to share with you some Scriptures showing how GRACE is related to our Salvation

Titus 2:11: For THE GRACE OF GOD that bringeth SALVATION hath appeared unto all men.

Ephesians 2:8: For by GRACE are ye SAVED, through faith . . .

2 Corinthians 8:9: For, ye know the GRACE of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though HE was rich, yet for our sakes HE became poor, that we through His poverty might be rich.

Hebrews 2:9: We see JESUS, Who was made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor; that HE by the GRACE OF GOD should taste of death for every one.

SINNERS CAN GET THE LORD'S IMMEDIATE ATTENTION to receive SALVATION if they come very humbly, PLEADING FOR MERCY:

Luke 18:13: And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto Heaven, but smote his breast, saying: GOD be MERCIFUL to me a sinner.

Isaiah 55:7: Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts, and let him return unto The Lord, and HE will have MERCY upon him, and to our God, for HE will abundantly pardon.

Did you take notice that the Pharisee, who is so proud, does not ask for MERCY? Why?

Proud people do not feel their need for MERCY. It is PRIDE which is keeping a lot of folks out of the Kingdom of God. The Lord Jesus said in **Mark 10:15: Whosoever shall not receive The Kingdom of God as a little child, he shall NOT ENTER THEREIN.**

Only those who feel they are unworthy and undeserving will BEG FOR MERCY.

ILLUSTRATION:

Jacob and Esau are twins, but not identical twins. Esau is proud and Jacob is humble. Jacob pleads in **Genesis 32:10: I am not worthy of the least of all Thy MERCIES,**

and of all Thy Truth, which Thou hast showed unto Thy servant. Those last two words reveal real humility of heart and, coupled with his first four words, brought him into God's GRACE.

You see, it is by GRACE that we are SAVED, through faith. God extends GRACE to the undeserving and the unworthy. But many do not receive that Grace. Why? Because they do not see themselves as undeserving and unworthy.

On the other hand, those who are BEGGING FOR MERCY are those who see themselves to be undeserving and unworthy. That is why these two words — GRACE and MERCY — are twins, but not identical twins. They are thus placed SIDE BY SIDE in **1 Timothy 1:2; 2 Timothy 1:2; Titus 1:4; and 2 John 3**, because that is where they belong, side by side. They are a part of each other, yet as different as Esau and Jacob are, although they are twins.

Perhaps this would be a very good place to ask you: DO YOU NEED MERCY? If your answer is YES, then there is good news for you. There is a DIVINE SOURCE FOR MERCY! There is a BOUNTIFUL SUPPLY, a VAST SUPPLY. There is enough for everybody.

This DIVINE SOURCE is: Almighty God, Maker of Heaven and earth. Listen to **Micah 7:18**:

Micah 7:18: Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy.

Sinning makes Him angry, as seen in the following verses:

Psalms 7:11: God judgeth the righteous, and God is angry with the wicked every day.

1 Kings 8:46: If they sin against thee, (for there is no man that sinneth not) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near.

Numbers 25:1-4:

1 And Israel abode in Shittim, and the people began to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab.

2 And they called the people unto the sacrifices of their gods: and the people did eat, and bowed down to their gods.

3 And Israel joined himself unto Baalpeor: and the anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel.

4 And the LORD said unto Moses, Take all the heads of the people, and hang them up before the LORD against the sun, that the fierce anger of the LORD may be turned away from Israel.

Continuing now with **verse 19** from **Micah 7:19**:

19 He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.

Psalm 108:4: For THY MERCY is above the Heavens: and Thy truth reacheth unto the clouds.

Psalm 145:8: The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion; slow to anger, and of GREAT MERCY.

Genesis 19:15-16:

15 When the morning arose, then THE ANGELS hastened Lot, saying: Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city.

16 And while Lot lingered (i.e., reluctant to leave, was dragging his feet, so to speak) the angels laid hold upon his hand, and upon the hand of his wife, and upon the hand of the two daughters; The LORD being MERCIFUL unto him: and they brought him forth, and set him out of the city.

GOD'S MERCY is also EVERLASTING

Psalm 100:5: The Lord is good; His MERCY is EVERLASTING: and His truth endureth to all generations.

Psalm 103:17-18:

17 The MERCY of The Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear HIM, and His righteousness unto children's children.

18 To such as KEEP HIS COVENANT, and to those that remember His COMMANDMENTS to DO them.

NOTE the conditions involved please, as stated in **Exodus 20:6** and **Deuteronomy 5:10** and **7:9**:

Exodus 20:6: And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love Me, and keep My commandments.

Deuteronomy 5:10: And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love Me and keep My commandments.

Deuteronomy 7:9: Know therefore that the LORD thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations.

Psalm 106:1: Praise ye THE LORD. O give thanks unto The Lord; for He is good, For His MERCY endureth forever.

Psalm 107:1: O give thanks unto the LORD, for He is good: for His mercy endureth for ever.

Psalm 118:1-4:

1 O give thanks unto the LORD; for He is good: for His mercy endureth for ever.

2 Let Israel now say, that His mercy endureth for ever.

3 Let the house of Aaron now say, that His mercy endureth for ever.

4 Let them now that fear the LORD say, that His mercy endureth for ever.

In **Psalm 136:1-26** there are 26 times that this FACT is repeated over and over again. In each verse there is a different instance given which marvelously brings this glorious truth home to us, therefore making it hard to forget.



GOD'S MERCY also has "DEADLINES". There is a "TIME LIMIT" involved in MERCY!

WHAT!!!! A "DEADLINE"? I never even heard of such a thing. Isn't that a contradiction to your previous reference to God's Mercy being EVERLASTING?

ANSWER: No, there is no contradiction here.

God will send His Spirit to convict sinners of their sins to turn them from the paths of the Destroyer. If those STRIVINGS of the SPIRIT are ignored, disregarded, or trampled under foot, then the Spirit of God is grieved away. He will strive no more.

Genesis 6:3: And the LORD said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.

Proverbs 29:1: He, that being often reprov'd hardeneth his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, and that without remedy.

Revelation 2:23: And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

Luke 12:20: But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

Genesis 7:4: For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the earth.

Jonah 3:4: And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown.

God gave them 40 days before Nineveh would be destroyed. When they repented and turned away from their sins, then MERCY was bestowed and the JUDGMENT LIFTED.

Turning now to **Hebrew 4:7**, God said He limiteth a certain day saying:

Hebrews 4:7: Again, He limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear His voice, harden not your hearts.

And also in **Psalms 95:7-8**:

7 For He is our God; and we are the people of His pasture, and the sheep of His hand. To day if ye will hear His voice,

8 Harden not your heart, as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness.

Isaiah 27:11: It is a people of no understanding: therefore HE that made them will NOT HAVE MERCY ON THEM, and He that formed them will show them no favor.

Hosea 1:6-7:

6 And she conceived again, and bare a daughter. And God said unto him, Call her name Loruhamah: for I will no more have mercy upon the house of Israel; but I will utterly take them away.

7 But I will have mercy upon the house of Judah, and will save them by the LORD their God, and will not save them by bow, nor by sword, nor by battle, by horses, nor by horsemen.

Hosea 2:4-5:

4 And I WILL NOT HAVE MERCY UPON HER CHILDREN; for they be the children of whoredoms.

5 For their mother hath played the harlot: she that conceived them hath done shamefully: for she said, I will go after my lovers, that give me my bread and my water, my wool and my flax, mine oil and my drink.

Hebrews 10:29: Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot THE SON OF GOD, and hath counted THE BLOOD of the Covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done DESPITE to THE SPIRIT of GRACE?

Jonah 2:8: They that observe lying vanities FORSAKE THEIR OWN MERCY.

QUESTION: Since MERCY has its DEADLINES, how long is the DEADLINE or DEADLINES?

ANSWER: The TIMEFRAME varies according to the ATTITUDES of the heart of the transgressor and the sinner toward God and His MERCIES.

1. The TIME LIMIT in **Genesis 7:4** was 7 days.

Genesis 7:4: For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the earth.

2. In Sodom and Gomorrah it was half a day. It was 10 days for Nabal in **I Samuel 25:38**:

And it came to pass about ten days after, that the LORD smote Nabal, that he died.

3. It was one day for Dathan, Korah, and Abiram in **Numbers 16:1-30**:

1 Now Korah, the son of Izhar, the son of Kohath, the son of Levi, and Dathan and Abiram, the sons of Eliab, and On, the son of Peleth, sons of Reuben, took men:

2 And they rose up before Moses, with certain of the children of Israel, two hundred and fifty princes of the assembly, famous in the congregation, men of renown:

3 And they gathered themselves together against Moses and against Aaron, and said unto them, Ye take too much upon you, seeing all the congregation are holy, every one of them, and the LORD is among them: wherefore then lift ye up yourselves above the congregation of the LORD?

4 And when Moses heard it, he fell upon his face:

5 And he spake unto Korah and unto all his company, saying, Even to morrow the LORD will shew who are his, and who is holy; and will cause him to come near unto him: even him whom he hath chosen will he cause to come near unto him.

6 This do; Take you censers, Korah, and all his company;

7 And put fire therein, and put incense in them before the LORD to morrow: and it shall be that the man whom the LORD doth choose, he shall be holy: ye take too much upon you, ye sons of Levi.

8 And Moses said unto Korah, Hear, I pray you, ye sons of Levi:

9 Seemeth it but a small thing unto you, that the God of Israel hath separated you from the congregation of Israel, to bring you near to himself to do the service of the tabernacle of the LORD, and to stand before the congregation to minister unto them?

10 And he hath brought thee near to him, and all thy brethren the sons of Levi with thee: and seek ye the priesthood also?

11 For which cause both thou and all thy company are gathered together against the LORD: and what is Aaron, that ye murmur against him?

12 And Moses sent to call Dathan and Abiram, the sons of Eliab: which said, We will not come up:

13 Is it a small thing that thou hast brought us up out of a land that floweth with milk and honey, to kill us in the wilderness, except thou make thyself altogether a prince over us?

14 Moreover thou hast not brought us into a land that floweth with milk and honey, or given us inheritance of fields and vineyards: wilt thou put out the eyes of these men? we will not come up.

15 And Moses was very wroth, and said unto the LORD, Respect not thou their offering: I have not taken one ass from them, neither have I hurt one of them.

16 And Moses said unto Korah, Be thou and all thy company before the LORD, thou, and they, and Aaron, to morrow:

17 And take every man his censer, and put incense in them, and bring ye before the LORD every man his censer, two hundred and fifty censers; thou also, and Aaron, each of you his censer.

18 And they took every man his censer, and put fire in them, and laid incense thereon, and stood in the door of the tabernacle of the congregation with Moses and Aaron.

19 And Korah gathered all the congregation against them unto the door of the tabernacle of the congregation: and the glory of the LORD appeared unto all the congregation.

20 And the LORD spake unto Moses and unto Aaron, saying,

21 Separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment.

22 And they fell upon their faces, and said, O God, the God of the spirits of all flesh, shall one man sin, and wilt thou be wroth with all the congregation?

23 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying,
24 Speak unto the congregation, saying, Get you up from about the tabernacle of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram.
25 And Moses rose up and went unto Dathan and Abiram; and the elders of Israel followed him.
26 And he spake unto the congregation, saying, Depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men, and touch nothing of theirs, lest ye be consumed in all their sins.
27 So they gat up from the tabernacle of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram, on every side: and Dathan and Abiram came out, and stood in the door of their tents, and their wives, and their sons, and their little children.
28 And Moses said, Hereby ye shall know that the LORD hath sent me to do all these works; for I have not done them of mine own mind.
29 If these men die the common death of all men, or if they be visited after the visitation of all men; then the LORD hath not sent me.
30 But if the LORD make a new thing, and the earth open her mouth, and swallow them up, with all that appertain unto them, and they go down quick into the pit; then ye shall understand that these men have provoked the LORD.

It was one year for Nebuchadnezzar:

Daniel 4:27-33:

27 Wherefore, O king, let my counsel be acceptable unto thee, and break off thy sins by righteousness, and thine iniquities by shewing mercy to the poor; if it may be a lengthening of thy tranquillity.
28 All this came upon the king Nebuchadnezzar.
29 At the end of twelve months he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon.
30 The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty?
31 While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee.
32 And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will.
33 The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws.

4. It was a matter of a few hours for the rich man in **Luke 12:20**:

But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?

5. It was just a couple of hours for Ananias, and a few minutes for his wife in **Acts 6**:

***1 But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,
2 And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet.***

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

- It was just a few minutes for King Herod in **Acts 12:20-23**:

20 And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and, having made Blastus the king's chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their country was nourished by the king's country.

21 And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.

23 And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

QUESTION: SINCE THE TIME ELEMENT IS UNCERTAIN, what should we do?

ANSWER: First, OBEY the following scriptures:

2 Corinthians 6:2: For He saith, I have heard thee in a TIME ACCEPTED, and in THE DAY of SALVATION have I succored thee: behold NOW is the accepted TIME: behold NOW is THE DAY of SALVATION.

God limiteth a certain day in **Psalm 95:7-8:**

***7 For He is our God; and we are the people of His pasture, and the sheep of His hand. To day if ye will hear His voice,
8 Harden not your heart, as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness.***

Hebrews 4:7: Again, He limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear His voice, harden not your hearts.

FINALLY, to obtain special favor with God to obtain MERCY, there are several steps that can be taken to assure us of God's SPECIAL FAVOR and to obtain His EXTENDED MERCY. The following verses will help out:

Daniel 9:4-17:

4 And I prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments;

5 We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from thy precepts and from thy judgments:

6 Neither have we hearkened unto thy servants the prophets, which spake in thy name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land.

7 O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and unto all Israel, that are near, and that are far off, through all the countries whither thou hast driven them, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against thee.

8 O Lord, to us belongeth confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against thee.

9 To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him;

10 Neither have we obeyed the voice of the LORD our God, to walk in his laws, which he set before us by his servants the prophets.

11 Yea, all Israel have transgressed thy law, even by departing, that they might not obey thy voice; therefore the curse is poured upon us, and the oath that is written in the law of Moses the servant of God, because we have sinned against him.

12 And he hath confirmed his words, which he spake against us, and against our judges that judged us, by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole heaven hath not been done as hath been done upon Jerusalem.

13 As it is written in the law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand thy truth.

14 Therefore hath the LORD watched upon the evil, and brought it upon us: for the LORD our God is righteous in all his works which he doeth: for we obeyed not his voice.

15 And now, O Lord our God, that hast brought thy people forth out of the land of Egypt with a mighty hand, and hast gotten thee renown, as at this day; we have sinned, we have done wickedly.

16 O Lord, according to all thy righteousness, I beseech thee, let thine anger and thy fury be turned away from thy city Jerusalem, thy holy mountain: because for our sins, and for the iniquities of our fathers, Jerusalem and thy people are become a reproach to all that are about us.

17 Now therefore, O our God, hear the prayer of thy servant, and his supplications, and cause thy face to shine upon thy sanctuary that is desolate, for the Lord's sake.

Psalm 32:10: Many sorrows shall be to the wicked: but he that TRUSTETH in THE LORD, MERCY shall compass him about.

Psalm 33:18: Behold, The eye of The Lord is upon them that fear Him, upon them that HOPE in HIS MERCY.

Psalm 33:22: Let Thy MERCY, O Lord, be upon us, according as we HOPE in Thee.

Psalm 52:8: But I am like a green olive tree in the house of God: I trust in the mercy of God for ever and ever.

Hosea 10:12: Sow to yourselves in RIGHTEOUSNESS, reap in MERCY; break up your fallow ground (hearts); for IT IS TIME TO SEEK THE LORD, till He come and rain RIGHTEOUSNESS upon you.

Luke 1:50: His MERCY is on them that FEAR HIM from generation to generation.

Galatians 6:15-16:

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a NEW CREATURE.

16 And as many as walk according to THIS RULE, peace be on them, and MERCY, and upon the Israel of God.

Hebrews 4:16: Let us therefore come boldly unto the Throne of GRACE, that we may obtain MERCY, and find GRACE to help in time of need.

TAKE NOTICE: There will be a KEY WORD or KEY CLUE in every verse to unlock the DOOR of MERCY.

ILLUSTRATION:

THE TABERNACLE in the wilderness is GOD'S MARVELOUS TEACHING TOOL. THE DAY OF ATONEMENT is AWESOME. The High Priest (a type of THE LORD JESUS CHRIST Who is our GREAT HIGH PRIEST) would take the PRECIOUS BLOOD from the Brazen Altar and bring it into THE TABERNACLE.

There were two compartments, the first being the Holy Place where all the Priests ministered unto the Lord. THE HOLY OF HOLIES is the second division into which only The High Priest would come only once each year on the DAY OF ATONEMENT. He would bring the PRECIOUS BLOOD of an innocent LAMB (a type of the Lord Jesus Christ) into the Holy of Holies before the ARK of THE COVENANT. Upon the top of the Ark was THE MERCY SEAT. Here he would offer THE ATONEMENT SACRIFICE for the sins of the whole nation of Israel. Their sins would be all forgiven, and they could go home FREE from a GUILTY CONSCIENCE and FREE from the BURDEN OF SIN. You can read the details in **Leviticus 16:2-34, 23:26-32; and Numbers 29:7-11.**

CHRIST is now in Heaven as our HIGH PRIEST and is at the Heavenly MERCY SEAT where HE ever liveth to make intercession for us, as noted in the following verses:

Romans 8:32-34:

32 HE (i.e., The Almighty God) **that spared not His own SON** (The Lord Jesus Christ) **but delivered HIM up for us all, how shall He not with HIM** (Christ) **also freely give us all things?**

33 Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's ELECT? It is God who justifieth.

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is CHRIST Who died, yea rather, that is risen again, Who is even at the right hand of God, Who also maketh INTERCESSION for us.

Hebrews 7:24-28:

24 But this MAN (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ), because HE continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore HE IS ABLE ALSO TO SAVE THEM TO THE UTTERMOST that come unto God by him, seeing HE EVER LIVETH TO MAKE INTERCESSION FOR THEM.

26 For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;

27 Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, Who is consecrated for evermore.

III. CHRISTIANS are to be PARTAKERS OF THE DIVINE NATURE which is GOD'S OBJECTIVE in our SALVATION

Romans 8:29: For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

1 Peter 1:4: To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,

Since GOD'S DIVINE NATURE is characterized by SHOWING MERCY and we — as believers — are now being conformed to HIS DIVINE NATURE, it is only natural for us to be like our HEAVENLY FATHER and His Precious Son, JESUS. For we are being conformed to The IMAGE of His Dear Son as we just read in **Romans 8:29**.

The Divine Nature is ever MERCIFUL.

QUESTION: Did you know that GOD expects us to be MERCIFUL and to show mercy?



GOD EXPECTS and even COMMANDS us to BE MERCIFUL and to show MERCY.

Hosea 6:6: For I desired MERCY, and not sacrifice; and the knowledge of God more than burnt offerings

Matthew 9:11-13:

11 When the Pharisees saw it, they said unto Jesus' disciples: Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners?

12 But when JESUS heard THAT, HE said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth. I WILL HAVE MERCY and NOT SACRIFICE: for I AM not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Hosea 12:6: Therefore turn thou to thy GOD; KEEP MERCY and Judgment, and wait on thy God continually.

Micah 6:8: He hath showed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the LORD REQUIRE of thee, but to DO JUSTLY, and to LOVE MERCY, and to WALK HUMBLY with thy God.

Zechariah 7:9: Thus speaketh The Lord of Hosts, saying: Execute true Judgment, and SHOW MERCY and COMPASSIONS every one to his brother. Oppress not the widow, nor the fatherless, the stranger, nor the poor; and let none of you imagine evil against his brother in your heart.

In **Luke 10:25-37**, The Lord Jesus asked a Lawyer in response to His Parable of the Good Samaritan this question: **Which now of the three, thinkest thou, was neighbor unto him that fell among the thieves?** The Lawyer said: **He that showed MERCY on him.** Then Jesus said unto him: **GO, AND DO THOU LIKEWISE!!!**

Proverbs 11:17: The MERCIFUL man doeth good to his own soul.

Luke 6:36: BE YE THEREFORE MERCIFUL, as your FATHER also is MERCIFUL.

QUESTION: Ask yourself this question: Am I MERCIFUL? What does MERCIFUL mean?

ANSWER: It means to be FULL OF MERCY

Question: Did you know that the MERCIFUL are getting as SCARCE as hen's teeth?

Isaiah 57:1: The righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart: and MERCIFUL men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil to come.

SPECIAL BLESSINGS PRONOUNCED UPON THE “MERCIFUL”:

- **Matthew 5:7: The Lord Jesus said: BLESSED are the MERCIFUL, for they shall OBTAIN MERCY.**
- **2 Samuel 22:26: With the merciful thou wilt shew thyself merciful, and with the upright man thou wilt shew thyself upright.**
- **Psalms 18:25: With the merciful thou wilt shew thyself merciful; with an upright man thou wilt shew thyself upright.**
- **Proverbs 14:21: He that hath MERCY on the poor, happy is he.**
- **Daniel 4:27: Wherefore O king, let my counsel be acceptable unto thee, and break off thy sins by RIGHTEOUSNESS, and thine iniquities by SHOWING MERCY to the poor; if it may be the lengthening of thy tranquility.**
- **James 2:13: He shall have Judgment without mercy that hath showed no mercy; and MERCY REJOICETH against Judgment.**
- **Psalms 85:10: MERCY and TRUTH are met together; RIGHTEOUSNESS and PEACE have kissed each other.**
- **Psalms 23:6: SURELY goodness and MERCY shall follow me all the days of my life and I will dwell in the House of The Lord forever.**

QUESTION: With all of these SPECIAL BLESSINGS imparted to the MERCIFUL, I surely ought to show MORE MERCY so I can obtain MERCY. Isn't it OK to ask God for more?

ANSWER: NO!!! A THOUSAND TIMES NO!!! For wanting to obtain MORE MERCY to benefit myself is very selfish, and is a PHONY MERCY shown. The motives are wrong.

The kind of MERCY which is imparted by THE LORD Who is imparting it in us as HE makes us PARTAKERS OF THE DIVINE NATURE, is a REAL and GENUINE BLESSED MERCY which is BLESSED of THE LORD. HE will not bless this carnal

kind. The man-made is counterfeit and artificial, and no BLESSINGS accompany it from The LORD.

IN CONCLUSION: In closing this message on ***BLESSED ARE THE MERCIFUL, for THEY SHALL OBTAIN MERCY***, may we take a closer look at SHOWING MERCY in our practical and every day life experiences.

We're directed in **Romans 12:8** — when showing MERCY — to do so with CHEERFULNESS. The recipient of our MERCIFUL DEEDS often will watch very cautiously the expressions on our face. They are testing to see if it's from the heart, or as a duty.

Romans 12:8: Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

2. Mothers, if your daughter, while trying to wash the dishes, should break some favorite glass or dish, is the child remorseful? Then your reaction should be tempered with MERCY. It's broken and nothing can be done about that, but your reaction can be anger or forgiving. Don't let the devil rob you of being MERCIFUL by his tempting you to give the child a tongue-lashing.

3. Husbands, you can bless your wives by cheerfully taking them to the store or going for them when they forget some item needed for the evening meal. Don't say: "Is this necessary, or can't it wait?" Or, "Why didn't you . . . ?"

MERCY AT ITS BEST THEME:

MERCY AT ITS BEST NEEDS THESE TWO INGREDIENTS: LOVING KINDNESS AND TENDER MERCIES

QUESTION: HOW DO YOU KNOW?

ANSWER: BECAUSE THE LORD SAID SO.

Psalm 25:6: Remember, O LORD, thy tender mercies and thy loving-kindnesses; for they have been ever of old.

Psalm 40:10-11:

10 I have not hid thy righteousness within my heart; I have declared thy faithfulness and thy salvation: I have not concealed thy lovingkindness and thy truth from the great congregation.

11 Withhold not thou thy tender mercies from me, O LORD: let thy lovingkindness and thy truth continually preserve me.

Psalm 51:1: Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.

Psalm 69:16: Hear me, O LORD; for thy lovingkindness is good: turn unto me according to the multitude of thy tender mercies.

Psalm 103:2-4:

2 Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits:

3 Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases;

4 Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies.

Psalm 119:77: Let thy tender mercies come unto me, that I may live: for thy law is my delight.

Psalm 119:88: Quicken me after thy lovingkindness; so shall I keep the testimony of thy mouth.

Jeremiah 31:3: The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.

James 5:1: Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

CLASS HOMEWORK: THE BEATITUDES
LESSON FIVE: HOW TO ENTER INTO A HAPPY AND BLESSED LIFE

1. _____ is a _____ - _____ of a righteous and a pure heart.
2. Write out Funk & Wagnalls Desk Dictionary definition of MERCY.
3. Write out Titus 3:5. According to this verse, do we deserve salvation?
4. Who is the true source of mercy? How about comfort? Peace?
5. Using the story of the Good Samaritan, explain the difference between grace and mercy.
6. In Isaiah 55:7 where it says "*If the wicked man will forsake his way and the unrighteous man his thoughts*", what will the Lord show to him?
7. Jacob's words to God revealed his humility of heart and brought him into God's grace. (Genesis 32:10) What were these words?
8. When Lot "lingered" before the destruction of Sodom, what did the angels do? What attribute of God did this show?
9. What are the conditions involved in receiving the Lord's mercy which are found in Exodus 20:6 and Deuteronomy 5:10 and 7:9?
10. God gave Nineveh 40 days to repent. How about Ananias (Acts 5)?
11. Since the time element of God's mercy is uncertain, what should we do?
12. See the syllabus on page 133-135. Find the key word or key clue in every verse to unlock the door of God's mercy.
13. In Leviticus 16:2-34, what was Aaron to do with the live goat? Describe in detail. How does this show God's mercy?
14. Since God's Divine Nature is characterized by _____, and we as believers are now being conformed to His Divine Nature, it is only natural for us to be like our Heavenly Father and His Precious Son Jesus.
15. What does Psalm 23:6 say about goodness and mercy?
16. Why is it wrong to show mercy so we can obtain mercy from God?
17. Give me an example of a situation where you could show true mercy.

LESSON SIX
THE “BLESSEDNESS” of having a “PURE HEART”

THEME: How to have a HAPPY HEART

Text: **BLESSED are the PURE IN HEART, for they shall see God. Matthew 5:8**

QUESTION: Is it possible to have a PURE HEART?

ANSWER: The Bible answer is: YES!!! Right here, The Lord Jesus says so, as well as in:

Mathew 5:8: Blessed are the PURE in HEART, for they shall see God.

2 Samuel 22:27: With the pure thou wilt shew thyself pure; and with the froward thou wilt shew thyself unsavoury.

Psalms 18:26: With the PURE Thou wilt show Thyself PURE.

Numbers 8:21: The Levites were PURIFIED, . . . and Aaron made an ATONEMENT for them to cleanse them.

Ezra 6:20: The priests and the Levites were PURIFIED together, all of them were pure.

Lamentations 4:7: Her Nazarites were PURER than snow, they were whiter than milk.

Daniel 12:10: Many shall be PURIFIED, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly.

1 Timothy 1:5: Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart.

1 Timothy 5:22: Neither be partakers of other men's sins, KEEP THYSELF PURE.

2 Timothy 2:22: Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on The Lord out of a PURE HEART.

Titus 1:15: Unto THE PURE all things are PURE; but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing PURE; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

Titus 2:14: The Great God and our Savior Jesus Christ, Who gave Himself for us, that HE MIGHT REDEEM us from ALL INIQUITY, and PURIFY unto Himself a special people, zealous of good works.

1 Peter 1:22: Seeing ye HAVE PURIFIED your souls in obeying the truth through THE SPIRIT, unto unfeigned love of the brethren, SEE THAT YE LOVE ONE ANOTHER WITH A "PURE HEART".

Psalms 24:3-5:

3 Who shall ascend into The Hill of THE Lord? Who shall stand in His HOLY PLACE?

4 HE that hath clean hands, and A PURE HEART; who hath not lifted up his soul to vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

5 HE shall receive THE BLESSING from the Lord, and righteousness from the God of his salvation.

INTRODUCTION:

NO DOUBT that it is most appropriate for us to remind you "WHO" is the ONE brave enough, wise enough, and capable enough to PREACH and TEACH on this subject but our BLESSED LORD and SAVIOUR: THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. HE is THE OFFICIAL HEAD of THE CHURCH, and it is HIS declaration which we are quoting.

THE LORD JESUS SAID: **BLESSED ARE THE "PURE IN HEART", for they SHALL SEE GOD!!!!**

If PURITY of HEART would have been an IMPOSSIBILITY, then our Lord Jesus was wasting words. He would have been pronouncing SPECIAL BLESSINGS which were unobtainable if HEART PURITY were unobtainable.

However, it is obtainable!!! In our very experience of the NEW BIRTH, that is exactly where it all begins!!!

QUESTION: Does that stun or shock any of you?

ANSWER: Well, it shouldn't if you know The Word of God well. For in **Acts 15:8-9** it declares:

8 And God Which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them (i.e., the Gentiles, in Acts 10:43-48) the Holy Ghost, even as HE did unto us;

9 and put no difference between us and them, PURIFYING THEIR HEARTS by faith.

Acts 10:43-48:

43 To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.

44 While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

In **Acts 15:8-9**, the apostle Peter is making reference to NEW CONVERTS to CHRIST, referring to these Gentiles in the house of Cornelius.

If you and I were GENUINELY SAVED, BORN AGAIN, REGENERATED, and REDEEMED by the Precious Blood of CHRIST then, we too, were washed white by the Precious Blood of The Lord Jesus.

- **Revelation 1:5: Unto HIM Who loved us, and WASHED US FROM (not in) our sins in His own blood.**
- **I Corinthians 6:11: Such were some of you, but YE ARE WASHED; but ye are SANCTIFIED; but ye are JUSTIFIED in The Name of The Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.**
- **Titus 3:5: Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy HE SAVED US, by the WASHING of REGENERATION, and the renewing work of the Holy Ghost.**
- Paul's personal testimony of God's instruction to him in **Acts 22:16:**

Now tarriest thou? ARISE, and be BAPTIZED, and WASH AWAY THY SINS, calling on The Name of The Lord.

- **Revelation 7:14: And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**



NOTE: What the precious BLOOD of JESUS does for the robes, He will do no less for the HEART!!!

I John 1:7: The BLOOD of JESUS CHRIST His Son CLEANSETH us from ALL SIN.

If any of you are ALLERGIC to this subject of HEART PURITY, as some are who have been either MISINFORMED or UNINFORMED on this BIBLE DOCTRINE, let me graciously and gracefully approach it by calling the following facts to your attention.

ALL OF US (and at least most of us if we have good sense) believe in and are in FAVOR of:

1. PURE WATER
2. PURE FOOD
3. PURE AIR
4. PURE ENVIRONMENT
5. PURE FOOD LAWS
6. PURE HABITS
7. PURE LOVE

Why, even THE BIBLE tells us in ***I Peter 1:22: LOVE one another with a PURE HEART fervently!***

Is there anyone here who would object to "THAT ORDINANCE"?

Most of you do want GENUINE PURE LOVE to come from your mates, your children, your parents, your brothers and sisters in Christ. You do not want pretended or feigned or artificial or counterfeit love, do you?

Did you realize that these words "UNFEIGNED LOVE" are actually in that **I Peter 1:22** reference?

I Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.

Did you know it is again repeated in **2 Corinthians 6:6?**

2 Corinthians 6:6: *By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned.*

Well, now, let us get right down to brass tacks (as we used to say) or — as others would term it — the “BARE FACTS”, for we want the NAKED TRUTH on this subject of HEART PURITY.

IT IS A FACT!!! You CANNOT have PURE LOVE without a PURE HEART!!! That is what is commanded here in I Peter 1:22.

How is the HEART PURIFIED to obtain this PURE LOVE? The answer is also included in this very same verse, thank the Lord! This is what it says:

1 Peter 1:22: *Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.*

OBEYING THE TRUTH???? Oh, TEACHER! There you go again, messing up my hopes for PURE LOVE with that!!! Don't you know that is a DIRTY WORD, an objectionable word, in most religious and church circles???? (i.e., OBEY)

Yes, I know it. But this is what the Bible teaches. Before we give you some very important scriptures on OBEDIENCE, please let us call your attention to the next THREE WORDS:

“THROUGH THE SPIRIT”. True OBEDIENCE is too hard to come by for many folks, and that is why they are turned off on even hearing the word: OBEY. So let's not overlook **“THROUGH THE SPIRIT”**. You needn't be turned off, for the secret to VICTORY is: THE ENABLING SUPERNATURAL POWER of THE BLESSED HOLY SPIRIT. HE makes the impossible, POSSIBLE!!! Hallelujah!!!

We're dependent upon THE HOLY SPIRIT as a baby is dependent upon its mother. That is why we find in **Romans 8:13** the battle won over the DEEDS OF THE BODY which are not Christlike. This is what that verse says:

Romans 8:13: *For IF* (note that BIG “IF”) *ye live after the flesh, ye shall die; but if ye THROUGH THE SPIRIT do MORTIFY* (i.e., put to death) *the deeds of the body, ye SHALL LIVE.* (Note: It is a LIFE or DEATH matter, and the Holy Spirit is our enabler, Praise The Lord!)

Did you make this important observation on the subject of PURITY in **I Peter 1:22**, namely:

a. The HOLY SPIRIT'S PART in this PURIFYING WORK

b. Our part in this PURIFYING process

- ***2 Corinthians 7:1: Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.***
- ***1 Timothy 5:22: Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.***
- ***James 4:8: Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded.***

c. Very importantly: THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S PART in our HEART'S PURITY

- ***Malachi 3:2-3:
2 But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap:
3 And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.***
- ***Titus 2:14: Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.***
- ***Hebrews 9:14: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?***
- ***Hebrews 13:14: For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.***
- ***Hebrews 13:19: But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.***

d. ALMIGHTY GOD'S PART in our PURIFICATION and CLEANSING

Ezekiel 36:25-27:

25 Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you.

26 A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.

27 And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.

e. THE WORD OF GOD our PURIFIER

- **John 15:3: Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.**
- **Ephesians 5:26: That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,**
- **1 Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.**

Before we can expound the Word of God on EACH PHASE toward our PURIFICATION PROCESS, let us return to that little ol' touchy seven letter word: OBEYING.

ALMIGHTY GOD EXPECTS our OBEDIENCE to HIS HOLY WORD. Did you know that OBEDIENCE is THE BASIC LAW of ALL CHRISTIAN GROWTH? Those who are DISOBEDIENT will stumble at GOD'S WORD and TRIP over THE LORD JESUS.

- **1 Peter 2:7-8:**
7 Unto you therefore which BELIEVE, HE is precious: but unto them which be DISOBEDIENT, the STONE which the builders disallowed, the same is made THE HEAD of the CORNER.
8 And a STONE of stumbling, and a ROCK of offence, even to them which STUMBLE at THE WORD, being DISOBEDIENT: whereunto they were appointed.

THE STONE:

- **Psalm 118:22: The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner.**
- **Matthew 21:42-44:**

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

- **Mark 12:10-11:**

10 And have ye not read this scripture; The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner.

11 This was the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

- **Luke 20:17: And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?**

THE HEAD:

- **Ephesians 1:22: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church.**
- **Ephesians 2:20: And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone.**
- **Ephesians 4:15: But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ.**
- **Ephesians 5:23: For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and He is the saviour of the body.**
- **Colossians 1:18: And He is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things He might have the preeminence.**
- **Colossians 2:10: And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power.**
- **Colossians 19:18: And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.**

CORNER STONE:

Ephesians 2:20: And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner stone.

1 Peter 2:6: Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on Him shall not be confounded.

The ALLERGY to the subject of OBEDIENCE can be cured by **Hebrews 5:9** if you have any hangups.

- ***Hebrews 5:9: CHRIST being made PERFECT, HE became the author of ETERNAL SALVATION unto ALL THEM that "OBEY" HIM.***
- ***1 Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have PURIFIED your souls in OBEYING the Truth, through The Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a PURE HEART fervently.***

When does this PURIFYING of the soul begin? When God's Word is obeyed.

WARNING!

Ephesians 5:6-7:

6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of THESE THINGS cometh THE WRATH of GOD upon the children of DISOBEDIENCE.

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them!

Partakers of what things? (NOTE: This is a message addressed to the CHURCH as verses 1-2 clearly set forth.)

- ***Ephesians 5:1-5:***
 - 1 Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;***
 - 2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.***
 - 3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints;***
 - 4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.***
 - 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.***

- **Colossians 3:5-10:**

5 Mortify (i.e., put to death) **therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:**

6 for which things' sake THE WRATH of GOD cometh on the children of DISOBEDIENCE;

7 In the which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

8 BUT NOW ye also PUT OFF ALL THESE: Anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have PUT OFF THE OLD MAN with his deeds;

10 and have PUT ON THE NEW MAN which is renewed in knowledge after the image of Him that created him.

These sins mentioned in **Ephesians 5:3-7** and **Colossians 3:5-10** are what defiles us and makes us impure. These are a portion of the list of Scriptures dealing with things that defile. Here's two more references:

- **Mark 7:20-23:**

20 And He (JESUS) SAID: That which cometh out of the man, that DEFILETH the man.

21 For from within, out of THE HEART (note the location of the defilements) **proceed EVIL THOUGHTS, ADULTERIES, FORNICATIONS, MURDERS, THEFTS, COVETOUSNESS, WICKEDNESS, DECEIT, LASCIVIOUSNESS, an EVIL EYE, BLASPHEMY, PRIDE, FOOLISHNESS.**

22 All these EVIL THINGS come from WITHIN, 23 and DEFILE the man.

- **1 Peter 2:1-2:**

1 Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

2 As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby.

Note: This instruction is directed to believers, and our OBEDIENCE is expected. If not, then these very things disobeyed will CURDLE THE MILK of THE WORD and render it unprofitable to us spiritually. Our spiritual growth will be STUNTED, and we will become dwarfed Christians and much more!!!

Ephesians 2:2: Wherein in time past ye walked according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of DISOBEDIENCE.

WHO does the devil work in? The DISOBEDIENT — so BEWARE!!!



HEARKEN!!! We will either OBEY THE LORD and HIS WORD, or we will be OBEYING THE DEVIL!!! OBEYING the devil comes from DISOBEYING GOD'S WORD. You have your choice as to WHOM you will obey. There is NO NEUTRAL GROUND or territory.

In **John 5:14**, the Lord Jesus told the man whom HE healed at the pool of Bethesda: ***Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.***

The same command gave our Blessed Lord and Savior to a woman in **John 8:11**:

She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

OBEDIENCE was expected from both. If not, then The Lord Jesus told the consequences for DISOBEDIENCE, and it was heavy, very heavy.

Galatians 3:1: O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched that ye should NOT OBEY THE TRUTH?

NOTE: I hope and pray that the devil has not bewitched any of you!

Galatians 5:7: Ye did run well; who did hinder you, that ye should NOT OBEY THE TRUTH?

What is implied here? That TRUTH should be OBEYED, quite obviously. The TRUTH is GOD'S WORD (**John 17:17**), for that is HOW WE PURIFY OUR SOULS.

- ***John 17:17: Sanctify them through Thy truth: Thy word is truth.***
- ***I Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.***
- ***Romans 6:12-14:***
12 LET NOT SIN THEREFORE REIGN IN YOUR MORTAL BODY, that ye should OBEY IT in the lusts thereof.
13 Neither YIELD ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness UNTO SIN: but YIELD yourselves unto GOD, as those that are ALIVE from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto GOD.

14 For SIN shall NOT HAVE DOMINION over you: for ye are NOT UNDER THE LAW, but under GRACE.

What then? Shall we sin because we are not under The Law, but under grace? HOLY HORRORS!!!! GOD FORBID!!!

Romans 6:15-16:

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not that to whom ye YIELD yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye OBEY: whether of SIN unto DEATH, or of OBEDIENCE unto RIGHTEOUSNESS?

NOTE: You see, beloved believers, we have a choice either way, of sinning or refusing to sin. There is no neutral ground. We will either do the one or the other as these Scriptures set forth. There is FREEDOM FROM SIN AVAILABLE.

In **verse 17** we have the KEY WORD and it is:

Romans 6:17: Ye have OBEYED FROM THE HEART that form of doctrine which was delivered to you.

Romans 6:18, 22:

18 BEING THEN MADE FREE FROM SIN, ye became the servants of righteousness.

22 BUT NOW being MADE FREE FROM SIN (not when you die) and become servants to God, ye have your FRUIT unto HOLINESS, and the end everlasting life.

FRUIT UNTO HOLINESS is what HEART PURITY actually is. It is a CLEAN HEART, freed from moral defilement. It is a HEART FREED from the pollution of SIN. PURITY is NOT a mixture of PART HOLY and PART UNHOLY, partially PURE and partially IMPURE.

1 John 1:7: But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the BLOOD of JESUS CHRIST God's Son, cleanseth us from ALL SIN.

1 John 1:9: If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

OOPS!!! We'd better get back to our subtopic of OBEDIENCE and OBEYING THE TRUTH . . .

Philippians 2:12: Wherefore, MY BELOVED, as ye have ALWAYS OBEYED not as in my Presence only, but now MUCH MORE in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For, IT IS GOD Who WORKETH in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure.

(Well glory to God!!! The heavenly vaccination did finally really TAKE on one church. Just think of that!!! “**ALWAYS OBEYED**” — that sounds sooooo good that we'd just like to repeat it: **ALWAYS OBEYED!**)

No wonder they are ALWAYS OBEYING, for GOD has been given right of way to WORK IN THEM. Thus, obedience is not hard to accomplish when THE ALMIGHTY is WORKING ON THE BUILDING; and that building is Us.

- ***I Corinthians 3:9: For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.***
- ***Hebrews 3:6: But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.***

I think we ought to put "IN" as well as "ON", for that is the INTERIOR DECORATING which all of us need to have done, which is HEART PURITY.

GOD'S INTERIOR DECORATING WORK is HEART PURITY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, and HOLINESS. (To conserve space, we will include Christ's and the Holy Spirit's part also.)

NOTE: Since THE ETERNAL DEITY is involved in this “PURITY PROCESS”, it is a boost to us spiritually to have DIVINE HELP to hasten us into being BLESSED. For, The Lord Jesus did say: ***BLESSED ARE THE PURE IN HEART. Matthew 5:8***

NOTE: Also, in view of the FACT that our BLESSED LORD purposed that — following our NEW BIRTH experience — we were to be made PARTAKERS of THE DIVINE NATURE, be conformed to the IMAGE of CHRIST, and be made PARTAKERS of HIS HOLINESS, it would only be natural for THE GODHEAD to participate in the accomplishing of these objectives.

PURITY is just one of these DIVINE CHARACTERISTICS. Therefore, we welcome this Divine help in bringing these objectives to pass.

- **Act 15:9:** *God who knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as HE did unto us; and put no difference between us and them, PURIFYING their HEARTS by faith.*
- **Titus 2:14:** *Christ gave Himself for us, that HE might redeem us from all iniquity, and PURIFY unto Himself a special people, zealous of good works.*
- **Malachi 3:2-3:**
*2 But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap:
3 And HE (i.e., THE LORD) shall sit as a refiner and PURIFIER of silver; and HE shall PURIFY the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto THE LORD an offering in righteousness.*
- **Ephesians 5:25-27:**
*25 Husbands, love your wives, even as CHRIST also loved the church, and gave himself for it;
26 That he might SANCTIFY and CLEANSE it with the washing of WATER BY THE WORD,
27 That he might present it to himself a GLORIOUS CHURCH, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should BE HOLY and without blemish.*

This is exactly what HEART PURITY is.

Definition of SANCTIFY: TO PURIFY, to make HOLY. (Cf. Strong's Concordance #37)

1 Thessalonians 5:23: *And the very GOD of peace SANCTIFY you wholly, and I pray God your whole spirit, and soul, and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

Hebrews 13:12: *Wherefore JESUS also, that HE might SANCTIFY (Greek: hagiazo - Strong's #37) the people with HIS OWN BLOOD, suffered without the gate.*

Ezekiel 36:25-27:

25 Then will I (i.e., THE LORD GOD) sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be CLEAN from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I CLEANSE you.

(Note: Webster's Dictionary definition of pure, along with Funk & Wagnalls Dictionary, and Thorndike-Barnhart Dictionary.)

26 A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you; and I will take away the stony HEART out of your flesh, and I will give you an HEART of flesh.

27 and I will PUT MY SPIRIT within you, and cause you to walk in MY STATUTES, and he shall keep MY JUDGMENTS, and DO THEM.

ILLUSTRATION:

Isaiah 6:5-7:

5 Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts.

6 Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar:

7 And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.

THE CHRISTIAN'S PART in the PURIFYING PROCESS

- **James 4:8: Cleanse your hands ye sinners, PURIFY your hearts ye double minded.**
- **1 John 3:2-3:**

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, WHEN HE SHALL APPEAR, we shall be like HIM; for we shall see HIM as HE is.

3 And every man that hath this HOPE in him PURIFIETH HIMSELF, even as HE is PURE.

NOTE: CHRIST is PURE and HE is our MODEL, our EXAMPLE, and our PATTERN for PURITY.

- **Daniel 12:10: Many shall BE PURIFIED and made white, and tried.**
- **2 Corinthians 7:1: CLEANSE yourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting Holiness in the fear of God.** (This is our part in preserving our purity.)
- **1 Corinthians 5:7: PURGE OUT THE OLD LEAVEN** (type of sin) **that ye may be a NEW LUMP, as ye are UNLEAVENED** (i.e., CLEAN and free from contamination or moral pollution), **For, even CHRIST our PASSOVER is sacrificed for us.**

I Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have PURIFIED (have is past tense, showing the word is accomplished) your souls in obeying the truth, through The Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a PURE HEART fervently.

NOTE: This verse PROVES that PURITY is OBTAINABLE. We will share other verses later.

I Timothy 5:22: BE NOT PARTAKER of OTHER MEN'S SINS: KEEP THYSELF PURE.

NOTE: These are ORDERS from HEADQUARTERS.

How could we know WHAT to PURIFY our souls from if we did not know those things which defile the heart?

That is why we request of you to refer back to page 151 for a partial list of those evil deeds given to help you get a general idea of what does the DEFILING.

How are people DEFILED? Who is an UNDEFILED individual?

Perhaps the best way to answer these two questions is to get a dictionary definition and a Bible definition of these two words.

DEFINITION: *not soiled, without blemish, upright, pure, clean.*

SCRIPTURES:

- ***Psalm 119:1: Blessed are the UNDEFILED in THE WAY, who walk in The Law of The Lord.***
- ***Song of Solomon 5:2: I sleep, but my heart waketh: it is the voice of my Beloved, that knocketh, saying: Open to ME, My sister, My love, My dove, My UNDEFILED.***
- ***James 1:27: Pure religion and UNDEFILED before God and the Father is this: to visit the fatherless and the widows in their affliction, and TO KEEP HIMSELF UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD.***
- **Hebrews 13:4: Marriage is honorable in all, and the bed UNDEFILED: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.**

SPECIAL NOTE:

Hebrews 7:26: For such an HIGH PRIEST (i.e., THE LORD JESUS CHRIST) became us, Who is HOLY, HARMLESS, UNDEFILED, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens.

Why take special notice? Because CHRIST is our MODEL and our EXAMPLE for PURITY as I **John 3:2-3** reveals:

1 John 3:2-3:

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

This verse gives us a good insight into what He wants us to be. For we are to be PARTAKERS of THE DIVINE IMAGE according to **2 Peter 1:4**. Now we know a little more of what this DIVINE IMAGE is like, and what we are to become:

- **2 Peter 1:4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.**
- **Ephesians 5:1-5:**
 - 1 Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;**
 - 2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savour.**
 - 3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints;**
 - 4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.**
 - 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.**

DEFINITION of DEFILED: *to make IMPURE, dirty, filthy, soiled, to violate the chastity of another person.* (Webster's Dictionary).

SCRIPTURES:

- **Genesis 34:1-2:**
 - 1 Dinah, the daughter of Leah, which she bare unto Jacob, went out to see the daughters of the land.**

2 And, when Shechem the son of Hamor the Hivite, prince of the country, saw her, he took her, and lay with her, and DEFILED her.

- **Leviticus 18:20: Moreover, thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbor's wife, to DEFILE thyself with her.**
- **Genesis 19:5-9:**

5 And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them.

6 And Lot went out at the door unto them, and shut the door after him,

7 And said, I pray you, brethren, do not so wickedly.

8 Behold now, I have two daughters which have not known man; let me, I pray you, bring them out unto you, and do ye to them as is good in your eyes: only unto these men do nothing; for therefore came they under the shadow of my roof.

9 And they said, Stand back. And they said again, This one fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them. And they pressed sore upon the man, even Lot, and came near to break the door.
- **Leviticus 18:22: Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination.**
- **Leviticus 20:13: If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them.**
- **Romans 1:27: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.**
- **I Corinthians 6:9-10:**

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind.

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.
- **Jude 7: Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.**

- **Leviticus 19:31: Regard not them that have FAMILIAR SPIRITS, neither seek after Wizards, to be DEFILED by them: I AM THE LORD your GOD.**
- **Numbers 35:33: Ye shall not POLLUTE THE LAND wherein ye are: for "BLOOD" (i.e., shedding innocent Blood, or murder, killing, infanticide, genocide) it DEFILETH the land: and the land CANNOT BE CLEANSED of THE BLOOD that is shed therein, but by the BLOOD of him that shed it.**
- **Mark 7:20-23:**
20 And He (JESUS) SAID: That which cometh out of the man, that DEFILETH the man.
21 For from within, out of THE HEART of men, proceed EVIL THOUGHTS, ADULTERIES, FORNICATION, MURDERS,
22 THEFTS, COVETOUSNESS, WICKEDNESS, DECEIT, LASCIVIOUSNESS, an EVIL EYE, BLASPHEMY, PRIDE, FOOLISHNESS;
23 All these EVIL THINGS come from within, and DEFILE the man.

NOTE: These words from our LORD and MASTER give us insight into those things that DEFILE, and from which the guilty parties need PURIFYING.

PURITY IS A NECESSITY!!!!

It is required and even commanded by The Lord in His Word. The following Scriptures will confirm this.

- **1 Timothy 1:5: Now the end of the COMMANDMENT (i.e., the objective) is: CHARITY out of a PURE HEART.**
- **1 Timothy 5:22: Neither be partakers of other men's sins, KEEP THYSELF PURE.**
- **2 Timothy 2:22: Flee also youthful lusts: follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on THE LORD out of a PURE HEART.**
- **James 4:8: PURIFY your hearts ye double minded.**
- **1 Peter 1:22: See that ye love one another with a PURE HEART fervently.**
- **2 Corinthians 7:1: Let us CLEANSE ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.**

- **2 Timothy 2:19: Let every one that nameth the Name of Christ DEPART FROM INIQUITY.**

OBJECTORS TO HEART PURITY or OBJECTIONS TO PURITY

The Lord foresaw that there would be such people. Some disbelieve it because they are allergic to HOLINESS, PURITY, and RIGHTEOUSNESS. Others are objectors because they are taught that no one can live a PURE LIFE in this sin-soaked world. Still others who do still have a CARNAL NATURE and who are unfamiliar with the in-depth teachings of **Romans 6:1-22, 7:14-25, and 8:1-13** do not know there is FREEDOM FROM SIN PROVIDED.

- **Romans 6:1-22:**
 - 1 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?**
 - 2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?**
 - 3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?**
 - 4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.**
 - 5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:**
 - 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.**
 - 7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.**
 - 8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:**
 - 9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.**
 - 10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.**
 - 11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.**
 - 12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.**
 - 13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.**
 - 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.**
 - 15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.**

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

- **Romans 7:14-25:**

14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

15 For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.

17 Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.

19 For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:

23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?

25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

- **Romans 8:1-13:**

1 There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:

4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.

6 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

7 Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

Here are several Scriptures that The Lord placed in His WORD for these OBJECTORS.

Titus 1:15-16:

15 Unto THE PURE all things are PURE: but unto them that are DEFILED and unbelieving is NOTHING PURE: but even their MIND and CONSCIENCE is DEFILED.

(Note very carefully WHO are the Objectors; namely, THE DEFILED. And then there is a second identification mark; namely, the UNBELIEVING in PURITY or HOLINESS.)

16 They profess that they know GOD; but in WORKS they deny HIM, being abominable, disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

2 Peter 2:13-14:

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you;

14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children.

How can or COULD anyone OBEY I **John 3:2-3** or I **Peter 1:22** if they do not believe in HEART PURITY? Or how can they obey and show respect for these SEVEN COMMANDMENTS on the TITLE: PURITY IS A NECESSITY (located on page 160) if they DO NOT BELIEVE PURITY IS POSSIBLE?

1 John 3:2-3:

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

1 Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.

Please observe carefully and courteously the following SPECIAL TOPICS which will give us the BIBLE answer to this problem which the DEFILED and UNBELIEVING are confronted therewith.

REMINDER!!! We have already given to you GOD'S PART, CHRIST'S PART, and THE HOLY SPIRIT'S PART in THIS PURIFYING PROCESS. Now we come to the SECOND and THIRD PARTS which are also very NECESSARY in the PURIFICATION of BELIEVERS

II. THE WORD of GOD'S PART IN THE PURIFICATION PROCESS

- **John 15:3: Now ye are CLEAN through THE WORD which I have spoke unto you.**
- **Ephesians 5:25-27:**
25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;
26 That He might Sanctify and CLEANSE it (i.e., THE CHURCH) by THE WASHING OF WATER BY THE WORD. (WHY?)

27 That HE might present it (i.e., THE CHURCH) to Himself a GLORIOUS CHURCH, NOT having SPOT, or WRINKLE, or any such thing, but that it SHOULD BE HOLY and WITHOUT BLEMISH.

Beloved, that is the kind of a CHURCH for which CHRIST is coming. It is the very reason why we will need also to consider the THIRD PART in this PURIFYING PROCESS.

John 17:17: Seeing ye HAVE (past tense) PURIFIED your SOUL (HOW?) IN OBEYING THE TRUTH (i.e., GOD'S WORD).

I Peter 1:22: THROUGH THE SPIRIT

QUESTION: How does the WORD OF GOD DO THIS CLEANSING?

John 17:17: Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

ANSWER: By our OBEDIENCE TO IT, through the enabling power of the Holy Spirit Who is included in this verse.

Psalms 119:9: Wherewithal shall a YOUNG MAN CLEANSE his way? (The Answer) BY TAKING HEED ACCORDING TO THY WORD.

QUESTION: What does taking heed have reference to?

ANSWER: Obeying the Word of God's instruction on cleansing and purifying.

I Thessalonians 4:3-7:

³ For this is the Will of God, even your SANCTIFICATION, that ye SHOULD ABSTAIN FROM FORNICATION:

⁴ that every one of you SHOULD KNOW HOW to possess his vessel in SANCTIFICATION and honor;

⁵ Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

⁶ That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.

⁷ For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

NOTE: Sanctification has two Scriptural definitions. The one many Christians are not familiar with is this one just mentioned in HEART CLEANSING AND PURIFICATION. It is very graphically described in 2 **Chronicles 29:5-18** where CLEANSE and SANCTIFY are alternately mentioned.

We should go then to **2 Chronicles 30:15-19** and **31:18** where it says: ***They SANCTIFIED THEMSELVES IN HOLINESS.***

2 Chronicles 29:5-18:

5 And said unto them, Hear me, ye Levites, sanctify now yourselves, and sanctify the house of the LORD God of your fathers, and carry forth the filthiness out of the holy place.

6 For our fathers have trespassed, and done that which was evil in the eyes of the LORD our God, and have forsaken him, and have turned away their faces from the habitation of the LORD, and turned their backs.

7 Also they have shut up the doors of the porch, and put out the lamps, and have not burned incense nor offered burnt offerings in the holy place unto the God of Israel.

8 Wherefore the wrath of the LORD was upon Judah and Jerusalem, and he hath delivered them to trouble, to astonishment, and to hissing, as ye see with your eyes.

9 For, lo, our fathers have fallen by the sword, and our sons and our daughters and our wives are in captivity for this.

10 Now it is in mine heart to make a covenant with the LORD God of Israel, that his fierce wrath may turn away from us.

11 My sons, be not now negligent: for the LORD hath chosen you to stand before him, to serve him, and that ye should minister unto him, and burn incense.

12 Then the Levites arose, Mahath the son of Amasai, and Joel the son of Azariah, of the sons of the Kohathites: and of the sons of Merari, Kish the son of Abdi, and Azariah the son of Jehalelel: and of the Gershonites; Joah the son of Zimmah, and Eden the son of Joah:

13 And of the sons of Elizaphan; Shimri, and Jeiel: and of the sons of Asaph; Zechariah, and Mattaniah:

14 And of the sons of Heman; Jehiel, and Shimei: and of the sons of Jeduthun; Shemaiah, and Uzziel.

15 And they gathered their brethren, and sanctified themselves, and came, according to the commandment of the king, by the words of the LORD, to cleanse the house of the LORD.

16 And the priests went into the inner part of the house of the LORD, to cleanse it, and brought out all the uncleanness that they found in the temple of the LORD into the court of the house of the LORD. And the Levites took it, to carry it out abroad into the brook Kidron.

17 Now they began on the first day of the first month to sanctify, and on the eighth day of the month came they to the porch of the LORD: so they sanctified the house of the LORD in eight days; and in the sixteenth day of the first month they made an end.

18 Then they went in to Hezekiah the king, and said, We have cleansed all the house of the LORD, and the altar of burnt offering, with all the vessels thereof, and the shewbread table, with all the vessels thereof.

2 Chronicles 30:15-19:

15 Then they killed the passover on the fourteenth day of the second month: and the priests and the Levites were ashamed, and sanctified themselves, and brought in the burnt offerings into the house of the LORD.

16 And they stood in their place after their manner, according to the law of Moses the man of God: the priests sprinkled the blood, which they received of the hand of the Levites.

17 For there were many in the congregation that were not sanctified: therefore the Levites had the charge of the killing of the passovers for every one that was not clean, to sanctify them unto the LORD.

18 For a multitude of the people, even many of Ephraim, and Manasseh, Issachar, and Zebulun, had not cleansed themselves, yet did they eat the passover otherwise than it was written. But Hezekiah prayed for them, saying, The good LORD pardon every one

19 That prepareth his heart to seek God, the LORD God of his fathers, though he be not cleansed according to the purification of the sanctuary.

2 Chronicles 31:18: And to the genealogy of all their little ones, their wives, and their sons, and their daughters, through all the congregation: for in their set office they sanctified themselves in holiness.

Ephesians 1:4: According as HE hath chosen us in HIM before the foundation of the world, that WE SHOULD BE HOLY and WITHOUT BLAME (i.e., this is what PURITY actually is) in love.

Ephesians 4:24: And that ye PUT ON THE NEW MAN, which after GOD is created in RIGHTEOUSNESS and TRUE HOLINESS.

Ephesians 5:26-27:

**26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,
27 That HE might present it to Himself A GLORIOUS CHURCH, not having SPOT, or WRINKLE, or any such thing, but that it SHOULD BE HOLY and without BLEMISH.**

1 Thessalonians 4:7: God has not called us unto uncleanness but unto HOLINESS.

I Thessalonians 3:13: To the end HE may establish your hearts blameless IN HOLINESS before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Hebrews 12:1: Follow peace with all men and HOLINESS without which no man shall SEE THE LORD.

THE LORD JESUS SAID: ***BLESSED are the PURE IN HEART, FOR THEY SHALL SEE GOD. Matthew 5:8***

III. THE CHRISTIAN'S PART IN THE PURIFYING PROCESS

MY PART in the PROCESS???? How can that be??? Why, I've been taught all of my Christian life by our preachers and teachers that there is nobody PURE or HOLY. If they who claim they are pure and holy say this, they're either lying or are deceived. That is what my preacher said.

My response is this: Please take this, or a copy of this, to your pastor and PRAY before hand that it will not give him INDIGESTION or IRRITATE his ALLERGY to HEART PURITY and HOLINESS.

That Greek word for SANCTIFY: *Hag-azo* means *to make holy, purify, to be holy, to sanctify*. Did you take notice that the definition mostly given for 'sanctify' does not include "set apart"?

Did you know that another Greek word for HOLY is *Hagios* which is defined as: *PURE, SACRED, MORALLY BLAMELESS, CONSECRATED, MOST HOLY, SAINTLY?*

Also, any good Dictionary on both of these words will say the same thing, and even say: *FREE FROM SIN and SEPARATED FROM EVIL OR MORAL DEFILEMENT.*

NOTE: Before we get to HOW WE'RE TO PURIFY OURSELVES, let me share with you some SCRIPTURES which refer to certain people who ARE: PURE, CLEAN, HOLY, and RIGHTEOUS

According to **Mark 6:20**, JOHN THE BAPTIST, the best Baptist preacher who ever lived, was HOLY and JUST.

According to **Luke 1:6**, ELIZABETH and ZACHARIAS were both RIGHTEOUS before God, walking in all the commandments and Ordinances of the Lord blameless.

Luke 1:69-70:

69 And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;

70 As he spake by the mouth of his HOLY PROPHETS, which have been since the world began:

Acts 3:21: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

Colossians 3:12: Put on, therefore, as the elect of GOD "HOLY" and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; forbearing one another, and forgiving one another.

I Thessalonians 5:27: I charge you by The Lord that this epistle be read unto all the HOLY BRETHREN. (If there is no one holy, then this Epistle would have to go unread.)

I Peter 3:5: After this manner in the old time the HOLY WOMEN also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves

Deuteronomy 23:14: The Lord thy God walketh in the midst of thy camp, to deliver thee and to give up thine enemies before thee; THAT HE SEE NO UNCLEAR THING IN THEE, and TURN AWAY FROM THEE.

(NOTE: DOING RIGHTEOUSNESS is a NEW BIRTH "BIRTHMARK".)

I John 2:29: If we know that HE is RIGHTEOUS, Ye know that EVERYONE that DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS is "BORN" of HIM.

I John 3:7: Little children, let no man deceive you: he that "DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS" is RIGHTEOUS, even as HE is RIGHTEOUS.

I John 3:10: In THIS the children of GOD are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever DOETH NOT RIGHTEOUSNESS is NOT OF GOD, neither he that loveth not his brother.

I Corinthians 15:34: AWAKE TO RIGHTEOUSNESS and SIN NOT: for some have not the knowledge of God, I speak this to your shame.

Proverbs 14:34: RIGHTEOUSNESS exalteth a nation, but SIN is a reproach to any people.

Daniel 12:3: They that TURN MANY TO RIGHTEOUSNESS shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and as the stars forever and ever.

Daniel 12:10: MANY shall BE PURIFIED and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly; and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.

2 Samuel 22:27: With THE PURE, THOU wilt show THYSELF "PURE".

Psalms 18:26: With the pure thou wilt shew thyself pure; and with the froward thou wilt shew thyself froward.

Numbers 8:21: The Levites were PURIFIED . . . and Aaron made an Atonement for them to CLEANSE them.

1 John 1:9: If we confess our sins HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to CLEANSE us from all unrighteousness.

1 John 1:7: If we walk in the light, as HE is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the BLOOD of JESUS CHRIST God's Son CLEANSETH us from ALL SIN.

Ezra 6:20: The priests and the Levites were PURIFIED together, all of them were PURE.

Lamentations 4:7: Her Nazarites were PURER than snow, they were whiter than milk.

2 Timothy 2:22: Flee also youthful lusts: follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on THE LORD out of a PURE HEART. (Thus showing there are those who DO HAVE A PURE HEART.)

Titus 2:14: Who (Christ) gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and PURIFY unto Himself a special people, zealous of good works.

(Note: To say no one is PURE is a sad and bad accusation which reflects on Christ and His ability to do what HE purposes and sets out to do.)

THE "BLESSED HOPE" which we are to be LOOKING FOR would be less than BLESSED if CHRIST is to come for a TARNISHED, SIN-STAINED BRIDE. That is why HE is DOING THIS PURIFYING of us. HE wants a CLEAN, SPOTLESS, HOLY, and WITHOUT-BLEMISH BRIDE according to **Ephesians 5:25-27.**

Ephesians 5:25-27:

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

1 John 3:2-3:

2 Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we KNOW that, WHEN HE SHALL APPEAR, we shall be like HIM, for we shall see HIM as HE is,

3 and EVERY MAN that hath “THIS HOPE” in him “PURIFIETH” HIMSELF EVEN AS HE is PURE. Seeing ye have PURIFIED your souls. (Note: Have is in the past tense, and so also is PURIFIED.)

This shows that here are saints who are PURE. What The Lord did in and also through them can be done for any and all of us also. Praise The Lord!!!!!!!

Then the command:

1 Peter 1:22: See that ye love one another with a PURE HEART fervently.

We could not obey this command if our hearts were NOT PURE, or could ever be PURE in this life. What we are trying to show you is this: Any claim by our dear fellow ministers that anyone claiming PURITY of HEART is either lying or is deceived is a FLAT contradiction of all these Scriptures which we have given to you. What is more — the COMMAND in **James 4:8: TO PURIFY your HEARTS ye double minded** — would be out of place, out of order, and in conflict with our ability to do it if no one can be PURE in this life. GOD DOES NOT CONTRADICT HIS WORD.

The Precious Lord Jesus knows we can be PURE, and HE pronounces a SPECIAL BLESSING upon those who are PURE in HEART. HE said in **Matthew 5:8:**

BLESSED are (not *will* be some day, but present tense *ARE*) **the PURE IN HEART, for they SHALL SEE GOD.** We shall expound on this last part a little later.

BELIEVERS and THE “PURIFYING HOPE”

1 John 3:3: Everyone that hath THIS HOPE in him “PURIFIETH HIMSELF” even as HE is Pure.

Are you PURIFYING yourself even as JESUS is PURE? If not, why not? The answer which we have received from so many throughout our years in the ministry is: Well, this is a NEW DOCTRINE to me, so I will need to study it through in order to believe it and put it into practice.

My response: Thank you for the honest answer. Now, may The Blessed Lord help me to direct your hearts into a position to help you to simply DO what THE WORD of GOD is telling all of us to do. All I'm trying to do is help you to OBEY GOD'S WORD.

REMEMBER THIS. PURITY IS:

- a. A Holy Spirit's Revelation to be PERCEIVED
- b. A Valid BIBLE Doctrine to be BELIEVED
- c. A VITAL EXPERIENCE to be RECEIVED



UNTIL IT IS PERCEIVED, IT WILL BE DIFFICULT TO BE BELIEVED.
IF IT IS NOT BELIEVED, IT WILL NEVER BE RECEIVED.

We were curious as to how our fellow ministers handle this subject ON HEART PURITY. So we asked one of them: “Do you ever preach on the Beatitudes?”

Answer: Oh, yes, sure.

Question: How do you handle that sixth one: ***Blessed are the PURE IN HEART, for they shall see God?***

Answer: Oh, I just tell them that that is an IDEALISM.

Question: Does the Lord Jesus call it that?

Answer: Well, no, but that is what it is. You ought to know that yourself as long as you have been around.

RESPONSE: My brother, The Lord Jesus would have called it an IDEALISM if that is all it is. It has to be far more than that, for He would not have pronounced this SPECIAL BLESSING on a mere IDEAL, don't you think?

Answer: Let's just drop the subject, please.

Then we approached another fellow minister and asked him the same question. His answer was mind boggling: “I shy away from controversial subjects like that.”

Then we went to another: Do you ever preach on: THE BLESSED HOPE?

Answer: Not very often, but I do occasionally.

Question: Do you link **Titus 2:11-14** with **I John 3:1-3**?

Answer: Well, no, not exactly. I stay more on the subject of the Second Coming of Christ, per se.

Question: Since both scriptures deal with the SECOND COMING of CHRIST, do you tell them what the Qualifying Conditions are **to be READY for our Blessed Lord's Return?**

ANSWER: Well, no, I have not tackled the subject from that angle exactly.

QUESTION: Perhaps we'd better ask the apostle John to deal with this phase of the subject for us, don't you think so?

Here is his and The Holy Spirit's answer:

I John 3:2-3:

2 We know, that, WHEN HE SHALL APPEAR, we shall be LIKE HIM, for we shall see HIM as HE is,

3 and every man that hath THIS HOPE in him, PURIFIETH himself even as HE is PURE.

WE must conclude: If PURIFICATION were only an IDEALISM, these saints would not be taking such action on themselves. If PURITY was not an essential heart condition to be READY for CHRIST'S RETURN, then EVERYONE would not be involved. You know that "EVERYONE" is included in this passage of Scripture, don't you?

Next: We observe that the word "PURIFIETH" has an '*eth*' tacked onto the end of that word "PURE". Why is it there?

It means that we are to CONTINUALLY PURIFY our souls. For we're living in a defiled society, and even though the Word admonishes us to KEEP OURSELVES UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD, we do not always know where the spots are out there. What's more, not all of God's children have CRUCIFIED THE FLESH with its affections and lusts.

Galatians 5:24: And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts

Nor have all experienced the PUTTING OFF of the OLD MAN which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts.

Ephesians 4:22: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts.

Nor have all Christians entered into the full reality of **Romans 6:6:**

Knowing this, that our OLD MAN is CRUCIFIED with HIM (i.e., Christ Jesus), that THE BODY OF SIN might be DESTROYED; that HENCEFORTH (i.e., from now on) WE SHOULD NOT SERVE SIN.

Romans 6:14-22:

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

Then tie it in with **Ephesians 4:22-24, Colossians 3:5-10 and John 8:31-36:**

Ephesians 4:22-24:

22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Colossians 3:5-10:

5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:

6 For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience:

7 In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.

8 But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him.

John 8:31-36:

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.



What do we find? There is VICTORY over SIN promised, provided, and proclaimed.

The BIG QUESTION THEN is: HOW DO WE PURIFY OURSELVES?

Turning back to point numbers I and II — The entire DEITY and THE WORD of GOD are our primary and principal answers. However, we are involved in step number II which connects us to:

I Peter 1:22: Seeing ye HAVE (past tense, for they have already OBEYED THE WORD with the HOLY SPIRIT'S HELP) PURIFIED your souls in OBEYING THE TRUTH THROUGH THE SPIRIT unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a PURE HEART fervently.

That word PURIFIETH in I John 3:3 implies IMPURITY, and that we are to be involved in this PURIFICATION PROCESS.

1 John 3:3: And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

The Lord Jesus did the first phase in **Acts 15:9**. Now HE is expecting *us* to do our part in preparation for His soon return.

Acts 15:9: And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

One of my good preacher brethren said to me in response to our expounding on these Scriptures: It is TRUE that PURITY is found in a whole lot of places in the Bible, but remember this: THAT THIS IS AN "IMPUTED PURITY" and not an actual PURITY on our part.

If this be the case, why are we commanded to "KEEP THYSELF PURE":

1 Timothy 5:22: Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.

James 4:8: Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded.

Why, in **1 Peter 1:22**, it says: **Seeing "YE" have PURIFIED YOUR SOULS**. This is our part in the process.

1 Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.

And in our text **1 John 3:3: Everyone that hath this hope in him, PURIFIETH HIMSELF even as HE is PURE**.

So, you can see that we are involved. What do you have to say about that?

ANSWER: "Let's just drop the subject" was the answer we got.

THE ONLY TRUE PATTERN or MODEL for CHRISTIANS to MEASURE UP TO IS CHRIST:

1 John 3:3: Everyone who has this HOPE in him, PURIFIETH himself even as HE (Christ) IS PURE.

1. There are no CHEAP STANDARDS for us to shape up to. CHRIST is our PLUMBLINE. We learned what He is like in **Hebrews 7:26** in just one of many references.

Hebrews 7:26: For such a high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens.

2. Since we are to be PARTAKERS of THE DIVINE NATURE according to **2 Peter 1:4**, and also conformed to the IMAGE OF GOD'S DEAR SON, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, as in **Romans 8:29**, this text is right in order with The Lord God's primary objective in our salvation experience.

2 Peter 1:4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

Romans 8:29: For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

3. When we are exhorted in **James 4:8**:

Cleanse your hands ye sinners, PURIFY your hearts ye DOUBLE MINDED, be afflicted, mourn (note **Matthew 5:4** which links us in to the second Be-Attitude) ***weep: let your laughter be turned into MOURNING.***

Brother, sister, this is serious business we're in. This is no mere idealism, this is reality and a necessity to obtaining HEART PURITY.

FINALLY, the REWARD for entering into HEART PURITY is: ***BLESSED ARE THE PURE IN HEART, FOR THEY SHALL SEE GOD. Matthew 5:8***

Revelation 19:7-8:

7 Let us REJOICE and give honor to HIM: for the Marriage of the LAMB is come, and HIS BRIDE HATH MADE HERSELF READY.

8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in FINE LINEN, CLEAN and WHITE: for the fine LINEN is THE RIGHTEOUSNESS of SAINTS.

In **1 John 3:3**, we who have THIS HOPE in us "**PURIFIETH**"; this expresses present ACTION and EFFORT on our part.

1 John 3:3: And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

We who want to be READY for THE RAPTURE will simply do what HE tells us to do. For, OUR OBEDIENCE proves our LOVE for THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.

John 14:15: (JESUS said): IF YE LOVE ME, KEEP MY COMMANDMENTS.

John 14:21: And, HE that hath My commandments and keepeth them, he it is that LOVETH ME.

WHAT'S MORE, I'm so glad HE provided the HOLY SPIRIT'S help for this PURIFICATION to be accomplished. See **1 Peter 1:22** and **Romans 8:13**:

1 Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently:

Romans 8:13: For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

He has my full cooperation. And now, it will be a joy to hear HIM say in **Matthew 25:21**:

. . . Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the JOY of thy lord.

And this is just one of the FEW THINGS that is included.

CLASS HOMEWORK: THE BEATITUDES
LESSON SIX: THE BLESSEDNESS OF HAVING A PURE HEART

1. What is the definition of unfeigned?
2. You _____ have _____ without a _____.
3. What is the basis of all Christian growth according to your study guide?
4. Write out and meditate on I Peter 1:22. Who is the purifying through? Who obeys the truth?
5. Write out Ephesians 2:2. In whom does the devil work?
6. Is there any neutral ground when it comes to obeying the Word?
7. What does your study guide say Heart Purity actually is?
8. How do we get this heart purity according to Ephesians 5:22-27?
9. Define undefiled.
10. What does Mark 7:20-23 say defileth a man?
11. Purity is a necessity! Select 2 of the scriptures listed on pages 160-161 which confirm this and write them out.
12. What 3 people are considered holy by the Word of God in Mark 6:20 and Luke 1:6?
13. Any claim by our dear fellow _____, that anyone claiming _____ of _____ is either lying or is deceived, is a _____ of all these scriptures which we have given to you.
14. Write out I John 3:3 and meditate upon it. Do you think we have a role to play in our purification?
15. List the 3 things purity is.
16. We observe that the Word purifieth has an “eth” tacked onto the end of that word “pure”. Why is it there?
17. Write out I Timothy 5:22. What, in your words, is it saying?
18. According to John 14:15, what proves our love for the Lord Jesus Christ?

Lesson: #7
HOW TO LIVE THE “BLESSED” AND HAPPY LIFE

THEME: BE A PEACEMAKER

TEXT: ***BLESSED*** are the “***PEACEMAKERS***” for they shall be called the Children of ***GOD***. ***Matthew 5:9***

INTRODUCTION:

The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is THE PRINCE OF PEACE (***Isaiah 9:6***), THE KING of PEACE (***Hebrews 7:2***), and The God-appointed HEAD of THE CHURCH, is pronouncing a very SPECIAL BLESSING on PEACEMAKERS.

PEACEMAKERS are some of the most treasured kind of people to have around us. To be sure, they are more and more the most needed kind of individuals to have hanging around.

There are plenty of TROUBLEMAKERS hanging around, sad to say, but to find a good PEACEMAKER, they are much fewer in number and hard to come by.

QUESTION: Why is this so?

ANSWER: It is not by accident that The Lord Jesus Christ placed PEACEMAKERS right here in the midst of the NINE BE-ATTITUDES. For, true peace, lasting PEACE, and GENUINE PEACE are directly related to pureness of heart. We're not quite ready to elaborate on this phase of the subject just yet.

QUESTION: Why did the LORD JESUS CHRIST give us these Nine Be-Attitudes?

ANSWER: Because HE wants us to live the BLESSED and Divinely HAPPY LIFE. HE wants you and me to not only BE HAPPY and BLESSED, but also to PASS IT ON. That is what we are doing when we are His PEACEMAKERS. We can only PASS PEACE on when we truly have this precious, priceless possession residing in our own hearts.

THE WORLD GOVERNMENTS ARE IN SEARCH OF PEACE-PROCESSING DIPLOMATS AND PEACEMAKERS

The world's government leaders are in search of qualified and skillful PEACEMAKERS. They would willingly pay a “pretty penny”, a top dollar, for the services of such individuals. The WORLD is yearning for PEACEMAKERS as their Ambassadors,

Statesmen, and Diplomats to establish PEACE between the many warring nations. With all their specialized training and studying on the subject, their efforts seem to get bogged down, and their efforts come short of their objectives. Qualified PEACEMAKERS are nearly as scarce as "hen's teeth", and that's mighty scarce, believe you me.

PEACE ORGANIZATIONS IN THE WORLD TODAY

Do you know how many PEACE ORGANIZATIONS are actually in the world today?

Here is just a partial list in mankind's efforts to bring peace on earth and good will towards men. This list will not include those engaged in Marriage Counseling and Family Counselors who are attempting to reunite broken relationships in the home. Those groups number in the thousands.

This list does not include all the Psychiatrists and Psychologists who are hired to establish PEACE of MIND to individuals who have troubled minds. Nor does this list include all those skilled in THE PEACE PROCESS in our Public Schools and in the Penitentiaries throughout these United States. The mentally disturbed children in the schools, and the troublemakers in the State Prison System, have cost the taxpayers a whopping sum of money to provide help for these helpless people.

EXAMPLE: Dr. Fred E. Milkie, who is on the staff of the OHIO PENITENTIARY, said: *"Many of the prisoners truly want PEACE. However, these inmates are desiring and seeking PEACE on their own terms. They do not want to break away from their SINFUL LIFESTYLE. In reality, they really want their consciences SEARED"*.

(Note: This PEACEMAKER at the Penitentiary happens to be a Christian. That is why I'm calling this to your attention, for it is not the native language of the ordinary Psychiatrist.)

Now, returning to the National Level of Society, here is a partial list of PEACE ORGANIZATIONS in the United States and in Great Britain, Listed in Alphabetical Order:

1. Architects for PEACE - write Ian Abbot 41 St. James Rd., Kent, TN
2. Burlington Peace Coalition 30 Elmwood Ave., Burlington, VT
3. Catskill Alliance for Peace P.O. Box 353, Woodstock, NH
4. Charlotte Peace Network C/O Marilyn White 31111 Markworth Ave. Charlotte, N.C.
5. Children's Peace Committee 3400 78th St. Jackson Heights, N.Y.
6. Coalition for a New Foreign & Military Policy 120 Maryland Ave. N.E. Washington, D.C.

7. Communicators for Nuclear Disarmament 44 Hunt St. Watertown, MA
8. The Conservation Society Ltd. 12 A. Gildford St. Chertsey Surrey - - United Kingdom
9. Correspondents for Peace 28 Forest Dr. College Station, TX.
10. Council for a Livable World 100 Maryland Ave. N.E. Washington, D.C.
11. Greenville Peace Committee 610 S. Elm St. Greenville, N.C.
12. International Fast For PEACEMAKERS 1500 34th Ave. Oakland, CA
13. International Physicians for Prevention of Nuclear War 635 Huntington Ave. Boston, MA
14. Lawyers Alliance P.O. Box 8171 Boston, MA
15. No. Carolina Council of Churches Committee on Security, Peace & Disarmament, Raleigh, NC
16. Operation Peace through Unity 151 Gonzales Rd. Santa Fe, NM
17. Peace Brigades International Box 199 Cheyney, PA
18. PEACE FOR ALL Box 285 Allendale, NJ
19. People for Peace of Southern Berkshire Great Barrington, Ma.
20. Physicians for Social Responsibility 210 Mason Terrace Brookline, MA
21. Raleigh Peace Initiative 814 Dixie Tr. Raleigh, NC
22. Rural Southern Voice for Peace Burnsville, NC
23. Scientists Against Nuclear Arms Milton Keynes M.K. U.K.
24. Triangle Chapter of Physicians for Social Responsibility Chapel Hill, NC
25. World Peace March Mobilization for Survival 85 S. Oxford St. Brooklyn, NY
26. THE UNITED NATIONS, New York, NY

The United Nations Organization is a confederacy of the largest nations on the earth trying to unite together to maintain PEACE on earth and good will towards men. Somehow, they just can't make it work. Even within their own organization there is disunity and a lack of harmony. How can they make PEACE outside when they do not have it inside?

Several well-known persons put it this way: "The United Nations is like a Gigantic Jig-Saw Puzzle with just ONE PIECE missing. That piece is a Person, and that Person is: 'THE PRINCE OF PEACE'. We believe that they hit the NAIL right on the HEAD, and so we can say a hearty AMEN!!!

QUESTION: Do you KNOW how many PEACE TREATIES have been made here on earth during the last nearly 2,000 years? There have been over 14,533 PEACE TREATIES made. Do you KNOW how many of these Peace Treaties have been kept intact?

ANSWER: So you won't get the BLUES and GRUBBY MUGS, it would be best to delete the answer, at least for now. For we have a MUCH MORE IMPORTANT QUESTION which needs to be ANSWERED. This is it:

QUESTION: Why is PEACE so FRAGILE, so FRAGMENTARY, so ELUSIVE, so TEMPORAL, so Temporary, and so short-lived?

When literally HUNDREDS of BOOKS have been written on this vitally important subject, it would seem like somebody would come up with THE ANSWER.

Dr. Henry Kissinger, who is a PEACE GENIUS as a PEACEMAKER, was commended by our own United States Government and its Presidents for his efforts to negotiate a Peace Treaty with Egypt and the Israeli Government. That Peace Treaty is not without problems, however. It is PEACE at a HIGH PRICE. For, our own Government and several other nations have had to establish a Buffer Zone between these two nations, and in it are soldiers and sophisticated Electronic Devices for surveillance. Even he, when lecturing around our nations on the techniques for MAKING PEACE, has had to admit that the PEACE is very FRAGILE, even with all his skillful efforts. This is one of the VERY "BRAINIEST" speaking.

HOW COME? WHAT'S THE PROBLEM?

Politicians, Statesmen, Ambassadors, and/or Diplomats do not have the ANSWER. Psychologists, Psychiatrists, and Sociologists do not have the ANSWER either, unless they are Christians. Even these are in the minority in those professions. Why can't these intellectuals resolve THE PEACE PROBLEMS? WHY CAN'T these well-educated men solve the PEACE-MAKING PROBLEMS?

Giving you the BARE FACTS, many of them have PEACE DATA in their heads, but do not have PEACE in their HEARTS. This kind of PEACE can only come from the GENUINE THREE-FOLD SOURCE OF PEACE.

SCRIPTURAL PROOF: ***Romans 3:17: And The WAY of PEACE have they NOT KNOWN.***

In order to appreciate what this verse is really saying, we need to go to **verses 10-18** for the background to this verse. For, in the background, we will learn what the PEACE DESTROYER actually is.

Romans 3:10-18:

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips:

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness:

15 Their feet are swift to shed blood:

16 Destruction and misery are in their ways:

17 And the way of peace have they not known:

18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

This is the GIANT SPIDER that is creating all the turmoil and is the culprit engaged — as a WRECKING CREW — from the inside of the HEART.

All these well-trained negotiators of PEACE on the national level, on the state level, and on the personal level are trying very nobly to establish PEACE between peoples and nations. Their efforts are merely like trying to get rid of the COBWEBS and not getting to the BIG SPIDER causing those troubles.

ILLUSTRATION:

One of our very capable and noble Presidents, the former President Woodrow Wilson, worked diligently with the heads of European Nations to establish A LASTING PEACE. It was on November 11, 1918 that the ARMISTICE was signed by participating nations to make the world safe for democracy. So they said. He was commended for his untiring efforts at being a PEACEMAKER, and he should be commended for his accomplishments. But how long did that PEACE TREATY LAST?

Hardly had the ink dried on the paper before wars broke out like the measles all around the world. It was so disheartening and very discouraging for such brilliant minds like this to now become despairing when all their efforts seemed to just go up in smoke. And, we HURT with them, bless their hearts!!!

WHAT'S THE PROBLEM? What's is the cause in this PEACE-MAKING PROCESS? These negotiators did not get THE SPIDER, and that is the answer in short.

Who or what then is the SPIDER?

The answer is a three letter word: S-I-N .

As long as SIN is on the inside, there can be NO PEACE on the outside. When CIVIL WAR is on the inside, it will break out into world war on the outside. Let us listen now to the WORD of GOD as it describes the human heart before it is transformed by the POWER OF THE LIVING GOD through the ATONING BLOOD SACRIFICE of THE LORD JESUS CHRIST and by the TRANSFORMING POWER of THE HOLY GHOST.

"SIN" IS THE DESTROYER OF PEACE; SIN IS THE DEFILER:

1. **Isaiah 57:20-21:**

20 The WICKED are like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up MIRE and DIRT.

21 There is "NO PEACE" saith My GOD to the WICKED.

2. **Isaiah 48:22: There is NO PEACE, saith The LORD, unto the wicked.**

3. **Jeremiah 8:11: They have healed the HURT of the daughter of my people slightly, saying: Peace, Peace: when there is NO PEACE.**

4. **Isaiah 59:6-8:**

6 Their webs shall not become garments, neither shall they cover themselves with their works: their WORKS are WORKS OF INIQUITY, and the ACT OF VIOLENCE is in their hands.

7 Their feet run to evil, and they make haste to shed innocent blood: their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity; wasting and destruction are in their paths.

8 THE WAY OF PEACE THEY KNOW NOT; and there is no judgment in their goings: they have made them crooked paths: whosoever goeth therein shall not know peace.

5. **Jeremiah 17:10: The HEART is DECEITFUL above all things, and DESPERATELY WICKED: who can. know it?**

6. **Romans 3:10-12:**

10 As it is written, there is NONE RIGHTEOUS, no, not one.

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of THE WAY. They are together become unprofitable; there is NONE that doeth GOOD, no, not one.

7. The Lord Jesus Christ gave unto His disciples a Parable which they did not comprehend. The Parable concerns those things WHICH DEFILE US. Then, our MASTER gave them the interpretation which will also help all of us.

Mark 7:20-23:

20 And He said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 For from WITHIN, out of THE HEART of men proceed EVIL THOUGHTS, ADULTERIES, FORNICATIONS, MURDERS,

22 THEFTS, COVETOUSNESS, WICKEDNESS, DECEIT, LASCIVIOUSNESS, AN EVIL EYE, BLASPHEMY, PRIDE, FOOLISHNESS:

23 ALL these EVIL THINGS come from WITHIN, and DEFILE the man.

8. **Psalm 55:19-21:**

19 God shall hear, and afflict them, even he that abideth of old. Selah.

Because they (the wicked) **have no CHANGES** (no changed or TRANSFORMED HEART that's born again of The Spirit) **therefore they fear not God.**

20 He hath put forth his hands against such as be AT PEACE with him: he hath broken his Covenant.

21 The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but WAR was IN HIS HEART: his words were softer than oil, yet were they DRAWN SWORDS.

APPLICATION:

Since SIN is the DESTROYER of PEACE, and we cannot become true PEACEMAKERS until we find the ONLY REMEDY for SIN, we now need to search for GOD'S PROVIDED REMEDY for SIN. It is SIN which brings: DISCORD, STRIFE, CONFLICTS, CONTENTIONS, DIVISIONS, and QUARRELING. It will necessitate an ALL-POWERFUL REMEDY and DELIVERANCE to bring in GENUINE PEACE.

DELIVERANCE FROM SIN HAS BEEN PROVIDED by: GOD ALMIGHTY, by our LORD JESUS CHRIST, and by THE POWER of THE HOLY SPIRIT!!!!

On the following pages we will share with you over twenty Scriptures revealing this FACT. Before sharing them with you, it would be practical and proper to discuss with you the following topics preparatory to the DELIVERANCE PROVIDED.

A. GOD ALMIGHTY, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, and THE HOLY SPIRIT WANT YOU TO BE FREE FROM SIN!

B. TEN CATEGORIES or CLASSIFICATIONS of SINS

C. SEVEN DEFINITIONS OF SINS

D. TWENTY CONSEQUENCES OF SINS COMMITTED

E. PREACHERS' RESPONSIBILITIES in dealing with the SIN PROBLEM

F. PREACHERS who are SOFT ON SIN turning GRACE into DISGRACE

G. GOD ALMIGHTY'S ATTITUDES TOWARDS SIN; CHRIST'S, and THE HOLY SPIRIT'S ATTITUDES

H. WHAT CHRISTIANS' ATTITUDES SHOULD BE and are COMMANDED TO BE TOWARDS "SIN"

- I. THIRTY-FIVE SCRIPTURES FORBIDDING US TO COMMIT SIN
- J. FREEDOM FROM SIN IS OBTAINABLE and IS PROVIDED IN GOD'S WORD
- K. "PURITY" — THE MISSING INGREDIENT to CONTINUAL and LASTING PEACE
- L. "PURITY'S KINFOLKS" — RIGHTEOUSNESS, HOLINESS, GODLINESS
- M. "THE PRECIOUS BLOOD OF JESUS" and THE WORD OF GOD are our HEART PURIFIERS, the DIVINE DETERGENTS in PURGING AWAY ALL SIN. (These last two were covered in Lesson #6)

DIVINE DELIVERANCE FROM SIN PROVIDED

1. ***Genesis 20:6: God said unto Abimelech in a dream, Yea, I know that thou didst this in the integrity of thy heart; for I also WITHHELD THEE from SINNING against ME; therefore SUFFERED I thee not to touch her.***
2. ***I Chronicles 4:10: And Jabez called on the God of Israel, saying, Oh that thou wouldest bless me indeed, and enlarge my coast, and that thine hand might be with me, and that THOU Wouldest KEEP ME FROM EVIL, that it may not grieve me! And God granted him that which he requested.***
3. ***Psalm 119:11: Thy WORD have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against Thee.***
4. ***Psalm 119:133: Order my steps in THY WORD: and let not any iniquity have DOMINION over me.***
5. ***Psalm 121:7: The Lord shall preserve thee from ALL EVIL: He shall preserve thy soul.***
6. ***Matthew 6:13: Lead us not into TEMPTATION, but DELIVER us from EVIL.***
7. ***Matthew 26:41: Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation; the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.***
8. ***John 17:15: I pray not that Thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that Thou shouldest KEEP THEM FROM THE EVIL.***
9. ***John 17:11b: Holy Father KEEP through Thine own Name those whom Thou hast given Me, that they may be one as we are.***

10. ***Romans 6:6: Knowing this, that our OLD MAN is CRUCIFIED WITH Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.***
11. ***Romans 8:2: The Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus hath made us free from the Law of Sin and death.***
12. ***Romans 8:13: If ye live after the flesh, ye shall die; but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.***
13. ***I Corinthians 10:13: There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man; but GOD IS FAITHFUL, Who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able to bear, but will with the temptation also make a way to ESCAPE, that ye may be able to bear it.***
14. ***Galatians 1:4: Who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father.***
15. ***Galatians 5:16: This I say unto you, WALK IN THE SPIRIT, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.***
16. ***Galatians 5:24: They that are CHRIST'S have CRUCIFIED the FLESH with the affections and lusts.***
17. ***Colossians 2:11: In Whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in the putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the CIRCUMCISION OF CHRIST.***
18. ***2 Thessalonians 3:3: The LORD IS FAITHFUL, Who shall establish you, and KEEP YOU FROM EVIL.***
19. ***2 Titus 4:18: The LORD SHALL DELIVER me from EVERY EVIL WORK, and will preserve me unto His Heavenly Kingdom.***
20. ***I Peter 5:8-9:***
 - 8 ***Be sober, be vigilant; because your ADVERSARY the devil as a roaring lion, walketh about seeking whom he may devour.***
 - 9 ***Whom resist steadfast in the faith.***
21. ***2 Peter 2:9: THE LORD KNOWETH HOW TO DELIVER THE GODLY OUT OF TEMPTATIONS, and to reserve the unjust unto the Day of Judgment to be punished.***

22. I Peter 1:5: Who are KEPT BY THE POWER OF GOD through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the Last Time.

23. Jude 24: Now unto HIM THAT IS ABLE TO KEEP YOU FROM FALLING, and to present you faultless before the Presence of His glory with exceeding joy.

24. 2 Corinthians 1:10: Who (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ and Almighty God) DELIVERED us (PAST TENSE) from so Great a DEATH (i.e., The Second Death — Revelation 2:11; 20:14; 21:8), and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us.

Revelation 2:11: He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.

Revelation 20:14: And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

Revelations 21:8: But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

Also, pertaining to The Wages of Sin Death Sentence see **Romans 6:15-23; Luke 15:24 and 32; Revelation 2:20-23; 3:1; I Timothy 5:6:**

Romans 6:15-23:

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Luke 15:24: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

Luke 15:32: It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

Revelation 2:20-23:

20 Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

Revelation 3:1: And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

1 Timothy 5:6: But she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth.

And He DOTH DELIVER (PRESENT TENSE):

I Timothy 5:6: and DOTH DELIVER (present tense) in Whom we trust that HE will yet DELIVER us. (i.e., Future tense)

So we have here three DELIVERANCES: past, present, and also FUTURE. For, one DELIVERANCE is not enough because we need CONTINUAL DELIVERANCES or else they would not have been provided for us.

2 Corinthians 1:10: Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us.

25. **Luke 4:18-19:**

**18 The SPIRIT of The LORD is upon ME, because HE hath anointed ME to preach the Gospel to the poor; HE hath sent ME to heal the brokenhearted, to preach DELIVERANCE to the CAPTIVES, and recovering of sight to the blind, to SET AT LIBERTY them that are BRUISED,
19 to preach the acceptable year of The Lord**

26. Romans 7:20-25:

20 Now, if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but SIN that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a LAW, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I delight in THE LAW of GOD after the inward man:

23 But I see another LAW in my members, WARRING against the Law of my mind, and bringing me into CAPTIVITY to THE LAW of SIN which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am!! (Note: The PROBLEM is THE LAW OF SIN in his members.) **Who shall deliver me from the body of this death?**

25 I THANK GOD through JESUS CHRIST our LORD. Then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

Now, turning to **Romans 8:1-2**, THE DELIVERANCE is PROVIDED. Why not SEE FOR YOURSELF? **WHO shall DELIVER me from the Body of this death?**

THE TRUE SOURCES OF "PEACE" is THE ALMIGHTY GOD. HE is THE AUTHOR of TRUE PEACE.

Did you know that Almighty God is identified SEVEN TIMES as THE GOD OF PEACE?

- 1. Romans 16:20: The GOD of PEACE shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly.**
- 2. Romans 15:33: Now THE GOD OF PEACE be with you all. Amen.**
- 3. Philippians 4:7: The PEACE of GOD which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.**
- 4. Philippians 4:9: Those things which ye have both learned, and received and heard, and seen in me, DO: and THE GOD OF PEACE shall be with you.**
- 5. Colossians 3:15: Let the PEACE of GOD RULE in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful.**

6. ***1 Thessalonians 5:23: The VERY GOD OF PEACE sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit, and soul, and body be preserved BLAMELESS unto the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.***
7. ***Hebrews 13:20: Now THE GOD OF PEACE, that brought again from the dead our LORD JESUS CHRIST, that GREAT SHEPHERD of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting Covenant, make you PERFECT in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is well pleasing in His sight, through JESUS CHRIST: to Whom be glory forever and ever, Amen!***

And that's not all. There is something more in the following verses:

Romans 15:13: Now The GOD of hope fill you with all joy and PEACE in believing.

1 Corinthians 14:33: God is not the author of confusion, but of PEACE, as in all the churches of the saints.

THIS "PEACE OF GOD" which HE offers to us and longs for us to have is A PEACE at an AWESOME PRICE!!! In **John 3:16** we have the GREATEST VERSE in all of the BIBLE:

John 3:16: FOR GOD so LOVED the world, that HE GAVE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON, that whosoever believeth in HIM should not perish, but have everlasting LIFE.

John 3:17: God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world, THROUGH HIM, might be SAVED.

Romans 5:8: GOD commendeth HIS LOVE toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, CHRIST DIED FOR US.

Acts 3:26: GOD sent HIS SON (WHY?) to BLESS YOU, (HOW?) in turning away (HOW MANY?) everyone of you (FROM WHAT?) from his INIQUITIES.

We can't be BLESSED living and wallowing in sin, doing evil.

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST is OUR PEACEMAKER, The ORIGINAL PEACEMAKER, and THE GREATEST PEACEMAKER

TEXT: ***Colossians 1:20: It pleased THE FATHER that in HIM should all fullness dwell; and having MADE PEACE through THE BLOOD of HIS CROSS, by HIM to***

RECONCILE all things unto Himself; by HIM, whether they be things in earth, or things in Heaven.

1. The SUPREME PRICE which THE ALMIGHTY GOD was willing to PAY to redeem us back to Himself, is when HE OFFERED UP His ONLY BEGOTTEN SON to be our SIN SACRIFICE.

Isaiah 53:10: It PLEASSED THE LORD to bruise HIM (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ); He hath put HIM to grief: When Thou (i.e., The Lord God Almighty) shalt make HIS SOUL an OFFERING FOR SIN.

2. The Lord Jesus Christ was delivered by THE DETERMINATE COUNSEL and foreknowledge of GOD:

Acts 2:23: Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: To do whatsoever THY HAND and THY COUNSEL DETERMINED before to be done.

Acts 4:27-28:

27 For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together,

28 For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

3. CALVARY IS A MUST — THE LORD JESUS CHRIST DECLARES THIS TO BE SO:

(a) **Mathew 16:20: From that time forth began JESUS to show unto His disciples, how that HE MUST go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and BE KILLED, and be RAISED AGAIN the third day.**

(b) **Matthew 26:54: Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to TAKE ME? I sat daily with you teaching in The Temple, and ye laid no hands on ME. But all this was done, that THE SCRIPTURES “MUST” BE FULFILLED.**

(c) **Luke 24:44: JESUS said unto them: These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that ALL THINGS “MUST” be fulfilled, which were written in The LAW of MOSES, and in the PROPHETS, and in the Psalms concerning ME.**

(d) **Acts 17:2-3: Paul as his manner was, went in unto them, and for three Sabbaths reasoned with them out of THE SCRIPTURES, opening and alleging**

that CHRIST "MUST" needs have SUFFERED, and RISEN AGAIN from the dead, and that THIS JESUS Whom I preach unto you is CHRIST.

Why is THE VICARIOUS SACRIFICE of CHRIST on CALVARY a NECESSITY?

The innocent SON OF GOD, the spotless and pure SON OF GOD, is THE LAMB OF GOD. This LAMB — in order to be an acceptable SACRIFICE for sins in the First Covenant (i.e., The Old Testament) according to **Exodus 12:5** — had to be a MALE, without BLEMISH, and killed in the evening of the third day. It had to be examined during those three days to see if there were any defects in it.

So Christ also was examined and then OFFERED UP AS OUR SIN OFFERING.

Luke 13:32: And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

Why is the CRUCIFIXION OF CHRIST a NECESSITY?

For ALMIGHTY GOD to be JUST and THE JUSTIFIER of all ungodly sinners in the world, HE must of necessity from a LEGAL and JUDICIAL standpoint provide a WAY whereby both HIS MERCY and HIS LOVE for us lost and condemned sinners can be PARDONED and FORGIVEN.

The LAW REQUIRES that the TRANSGRESSORS must be PUNISHED. JUSTICE to the LAW demands this. For in every LAW, to make that LAW enforced, there is a PENALTY for the violators of that Law. Thus GOD, in order to be JUST and still be MERCIFUL to sinners, MUST PAY our SIN'S DEBT in order to satisfy His "DOING JUSTICE" to THE LAW.

That is why THE LORD JESUS CAME to PAY OUR SIN'S DEBT. Christ paid a DEBT HE did not owe because we owed a HUGE DEBT which we could not pay.

THE LAW SAYS:

(a) ***Hebrews 8:22: Without the shedding of blood there is no remission for sins.***

(b) ***Leviticus 17:11: The BLOOD have I given to you upon the altar to make an ATONEMENT for your souls: for it is THE BLOOD that maketh an ATONEMENT for the soul.***

(c) **Exodus 12:13: THE BLOOD shall be to you for a TOKEN upon the houses where ye dwell: and when I SEE THE BLOOD, I WILL PASS OVER YOU, and the PLAGUE** (i.e., THE DEATH PENALTY) **shall not be upon you to destroy you.**

(d) **Romans 3:24-25:**

24 Being JUSTIFIED freely by HIS GRACE, through the REDEMPTION that is IN CHRIST JESUS;

25 Whom God hath set forth to be a PROPITIATION (i.e., a covering for our sins) **through FAITH IN HIS BLOOD, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.**

ILLUSTRATION:

Illustrations are often like windows in a house, i.e., they let the light in. So we hope this illustration will communicate to you what we have been saying about CHRIST, OUR PEACEMAKER, by the BLOOD OF HIS CROSS. **Colossians 1:20:**

Colossians 1:20: And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

JUDGE John Kerr was a Circuit Court Judge in the state of North Carolina. He was hearing the case concerning a man who had been CAUGHT STEALING. The Judge did recognize the THIEF, for the name rang a bell in his mind from his boyhood days. Checking the records as to his birthplace, this was the very same boy with whom he was school chums. They had played on the village green, and even fished and hunted together. After trying the case, the man was proven GUILTY, and Judge Kerr pronounced the sentence. He was either required to PAY THE FINE or GO TO JAIL. The Judge asked him which of these two he was willing and prepared to do.

The culprit was silent. Once again the question was asked: Which of these PENALTIES are you going to accept? Then, shaking his bowed head, he said that he had nothing with which to pay the fine. Then JUDGE JOHN KERR looked straight at him, asking the man to look up, then said: MY FRIEND, you may not recognize me, but I do recognize you. I'm John Kerr who used to play with you on the village green. We used to go hunting and fishing together. Do you remember? The man is stunned and very embarrassed. Then the JUDGE took out his checkbook, wrote the amount for the fine, then told the CLERK to come and get the CHECK. The Judge then told his schooldays buddy: "I'm paying your fine for you, so you may leave this court room a free man." Needless to say, there were tears in many eyes in the Courtroom that day, besides those streaming down the face of this PARDONED Lawbreaker's face.

JUDGE JOHN KERR was both JUST and THE JUSTIFIER of that man who was a THIEF. He kept THE LAW by UPHOLDING THE LAW. He could have been merciful and merely pardoned the man. But that's NOT "JUST" by THE LAW which requires a PENALTY for wrongdoers. This is WHAT THE LORD JESUS CHRIST did for all of us when HE PAID OUR SIN'S DEBT AT CALVARY.

Listen to these SCRIPTURES which support all that we have just been saying:

(a) **Luke 7:40-47:**

40 And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet.

46 My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Wherefore, I say unto thee, HER SINS — (i.e., the woman who barged into Simon's home and fell at The Lord Jesus' feet, began washing them with her tears, wiping them with her hair, anointing them with costly ointment, and even kissing them.) — which are many are FORGIVEN; for she loved much. But to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

(b) **Galatians 3:13: Christ hath REDEEMED us from the CURSE of THE LAW, BEING MADE A CURSE for US.**

(c) **I Corinthians 15:3-4:**

3 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that CHRIST DIED FOR OUR SINS according to the scriptures;

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures.

(d) **Acts 20:28: Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which**

he hath purchased with his own blood.

(e) I Corinthians 6:20: Ye are BOUGHT with a PRICE; therefore GLORIFY GOD in your body and spirit which are GOD'S.

(f) I Corinthians 7:23: Ye are "BOUGHT" with a PRICE; be not ye the servants of men.

(g) Ephesians 1:13-14:

13 In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were SEALED with that HOLY SPIRIT of promise,

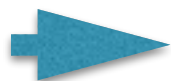
14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the REDEMPTION of the PURCHASED POSSESSION, unto the praise of his glory.

(h) I Peter 1:18-19:

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not REDEEMED with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious BLOOD OF CHRIST, as of a LAMB without blemish and without spot.

(i) Colossians 1:20: Having made PEACE through THE BLOOD of HIS CROSS, by HIM to RECONCILE ALL THINGS unto Himself; whether they be things in earth, or things in Heaven.



This is NO CHEAP PEACE which The Lord Jesus Christ provides for us. It cost Him His LIFE on CALVARY'S CROSS to PURCHASE our PARDON.

We mentioned to you at the very beginning of this message that CHRIST is THE PRINCE OF PEACE and also THE KING OF PEACE.

(j) Isaiah 9:6: For unto us a CHILD is born, unto us a SON is given; and the Government shall be upon His shoulder; and HIS NAME shall be called: WONDERFUL, COUNSELOR, THE MIGHTY GOD, THE EVERLASTING FATHER, THE PRINCE OF PEACE.

(k) Acts 10:36: The WORD which GOD sent unto the children of Israel, preaching PEACE by JESUS CHRIST: (HE is LORD of ALL).

(l) ***Ephesians 2:14: For HE IS OUR PEACE, Who hath made both (Jew and Gentile) one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us.***

(m) ***Hebrews 7:1-2:***

***1 For this Melchisedec, King of Salem, Priest of the Most High God, Who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him;
2 to Whom Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation: KING of RIGHTEOUSNESS, and after that also KING OF Salem, which is: KING OF PEACE.***

(n) ***Romans 5:1: Therefore, being JUSTIFIED by faith, we have PEACE with GOD through our LORD JESUS CHRIST.***

(o) ***John 14:27: THE LORD JESUS SAID: PEACE I leave with you, MY PEACE I give unto you, not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.***

(p) ***John 16:33: These things I have spoken unto you, that "IN ME" ye might have PEACE. In the world ye shall have tribulation, but be of good cheer, I HAVE OVERCOME THE WORLD.***

Who are the most QUALIFIED "PEACEMAKERS" here in this troubled world today? Those who have THE PRINCE OF PEACE, THE KING OF PEACE, dwelling in their hearts. For, in the following verses we read:

- ***Colossians 1:27: CHRIST in you the hope of GLORY.***
- ***2 Corinthians 13:5: Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not that JESUS CHRIST is "IN YOU" except ye be reprobates?***
- ***John 15:7: If ye abide IN ME, and I IN YOU, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.***

THE BLESSED or HAPPY to be envied are THESE PEACEMAKERS who have THE "PEACEMAKER" residing in their hearts. And, as it said above in ***Romans 5:1:***

And being justified by FAITH, we HAVE PEACE with God through our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

Since we HAVE THIS PEACE, we are to PASS IT ON to those who so desperately need PEACE.

JESUS SAID: **BLESSED** are **THE PEACEMAKERS**, for they shall be called **THE CHILDREN of GOD**.

Are you a PEACEMAKER? In order to be BLESSED, that is what we are to be DOING. CHRISTIANS ARE TO BE PEACEMAKERS:

(a) **Ephesians 4:3: Endeavoring to keep the UNITY of THE SPIRIT in the BOND of PEACE.**

This verse gives all of us who are CHRISTIANS a deeper insight into the Whole Godhead being involved in this PEACE PROCESS. We gave you God's part, and The Lord Jesus' wonderful part in providing for us DIVINE PEACE. But we need now to include the HOLY SPIRIT'S PART more in depth. It's discovered here in **Ephesians 4:3**. Now let us look a little further into . . . :

(b) **Romans 14:17: The Kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, PEACE and joy in THE HOLY GHOST.**

(c) **Galatians 5:22: The FRUIT of the SPIRIT is: Love, JOY, PEACE**

THIS SPECIAL PEACE BONUS comes as a third helping of PEACE. We should be LOADED with PEACE which comes from our blessed Heavenly Father, His Son - The Lord Jesus, and also from THE HOLY SPIRIT.

We should be, and ought to be, and will want to be: PASSERS on OF THE PEACE WE HAVE. We should be, and ought to be, and will want to be: Like the Sea of Galilee and not like the Dead Sea which takes in but never gives out. That is why it is DEAD you see.

A MAJOR "SIGN" of THE IMMINENT RETURN of our LORD and SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST

QUESTION: What is it?

ANSWER: I Thessalonians 5:3

SUBJECT: THE PEACE CONFERENCE SIGN

TEXT: **I Thessalonians 5:3: For when "they" shall say PEACE and SAFETY; THEN sudden destruction cometh upon "them" as travail upon a woman with child; and "they" shall not escape.**

Did you take notice of our placing quotation marks around "they" and "them"?

When you read the complete context, you will discover that two very different GROUPS of PEOPLE are being addressed in this Epistle: THE TRUE BELIEVERS in CHRIST, and the UNBELIEVERS, the people of this world's system. They are the ones we made reference to in over 26 PEACE ORGANIZATIONS in the world today.

There will arise soon, after the CHURCH is CAUGHT UP TO BE WITH CHRIST IN THE AIR, the world's greatest "PEACEMAKER". He will be the ANTI-CHRIST, the FALSE CHRIST, who will come in PEACEABLY. He will obtain the Kingdoms of this world by FLATTERIES. He will be a VILE person, as described in **Daniel 11:21**. It says in **verses 23-24** that he will work DECEITFULLY and will enter PEACEABLY, even upon the wealthiest nations. He will forecast or prophesy his devices even for a while. Then in **verse 27** it says that a group of kings will speak LIES at one table, and this old world is in for its worst disaster and collapse.

Why will all their PEACE CONFERENCES and EFFORTS FALL APART?

Daniel 11:21-24:

21 And in his estate shall stand up a vile person, to whom they shall not give the honour of the kingdom: but he shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries.

22 And with the arms of a flood shall they be overflown from before him, and shall be broken; yea, also the prince of the covenant.

23 And after the league made with him he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people.

24 He shall enter peaceably even upon the fattest places of the province; and he shall do that which his fathers have not done, nor his fathers' fathers; he shall scatter among them the prey, and spoil, and riches: yea, and he shall forecast his devices against the strong holds, even for a time.

Daniel 11:27 And both these kings' hearts shall be to do mischief, and they shall speak lies at one table; but it shall not prosper: for yet the end shall be at the time appointed.

Because they lack the TWO GREATEST INGREDIENTS for PEACE:

A. THE PRINCE OF PEACE, The LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE KING OF PEACE

B. THE second ingredient to TRUE PEACE is: PEACE WITH PURITY. There can be absolutely no CONTINUAL PEACE — either for the CHRISTIAN or for this world's peacemakers — without both of these.

Do you recall at the commencement of this MESSAGE ON PEACEMAKERS that we said that it is not by accident that our Blessed LORD JESUS placed PEACEMAKERS immediately after PURE IN HEART?

He did so for a very important reason.

It takes the keeping of a HEART CLEAN to maintain the PEACE which we received when we were first saved from our sins.

Sin is a PEACE DESTROYER, and it is the main cause for all the WRANGLING, FUSSING, QUARRELING, DEBATING, STRIFE, CONTENTIONS, CONFLICTS, SEPARATIONS, DIVORCES, WARS, and TURMOILS in the whole world.

SIN is the WRECKER of HOMES, of CHURCHES, and of NATIONS. It brings on CIVIL war within the human heart, and then it overflows to the outside world. It is like leaven or yeast which will leaven the whole lump as we're told in **I Corinthians 5:7**.

We're commanded in **I Corinthians 5:7** to: **PURGE OUT the OLD LEAVEN that ye may be a NEW LUMP, as ye are unleavened. For even CHRIST our PASSOVER is sacrificed for us.**

I Corinthinas 5:8 says: **Therefore, let us KEEP THE FEAST, NOT WITH OLD LEAVEN, neither with the LEAVEN OF MALICE and WICKEDNESS: but with the UNLEAVENED BREAD of SINCERITY and TRUTH.**

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE TRUE HEAD OF THE CHURCH, places PURITY first, in **verse 8**; then follows it up with: BLESSED ARE THE PEACEMAKERS.

Here, PURITY precedes PEACE. This is a very important REVELATION to be PERCEIVED.

When it is PERCEIVED, then it can be BELIEVED.

When it is BELIEVED, then it will be RECEIVED.

PEACE WITH PURITY

There can be no Continual Peace without Purity of Heart. This is a Divine Decree and it will be confirmed by many more Scriptural References. PEACE can only be RETAINED and MAINTAINED WITH PURITY. PURITY'S kinfolks are RIGHTEOUSNESS and HOLINESS of heart.

1. Psalm 85:10: Mercy and truth are met together, RIGHTEOUSNESS and PEACE have kissed each other.

Did you notice that RIGHTEOUSNESS comes first, then PEACE? Righteousness is another synonym for PURITY of heart.

2. Isaiah 32:17: The work of RIGHTEOUSNESS shall be PEACE, and the effect of RIGHTEOUSNESS QUIETNESS and assurance forever.

Did you notice once again that RIGHTEOUSNESS precedes PEACE? Did you also notice the permanency of this Peace associated with Righteousness — “QUIETNESS FOREVER”?

3. 2 Timothy 2:22: Flee youthful lusts, FOLLOW RIGHTEOUSNESS, faith, charity, and PEACE with them that call on the LORD out of a PURE HEART. (Again, righteousness comes before peace.)

4. Hebrews 7:1-2:

**1 For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him;
2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace;**

Notice that in **verse 2** it calls this Melchisedec (the King of Salem) “KING of RIGHTEOUSNESS” and after that “KING of PEACE”?

Note: Even in the very TITLES of THE LORD JESUS CHRIST which describe His true nature and character, this RIGHTEOUSNESS quality comes before THE PEACE characteristic. Righteousness comes once again before Peace.

5. Hebrews 12:14: FOLLOW PEACE with all men and HOLINESS without which no man shall see the LORD.

6. James 3:17: But the wisdom that is from above is first PURE, then PEACEABLE, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

NOTE: One more — PURITY precedes PEACE.

7. James 3:18: The FRUIT of RIGHTEOUSNESS is sown in PEACE of them that make PEACE.

8. **2 Peter 3:13-14:**

13 Nevertheless we, according to His Promise, look for New Heavens and a New Earth, wherein dwelleth RIGHTEOUSNESS.

14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, BE DILIGENT that ye may be found IN HIM (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ) IN PEACE, without SPOT, and BLAMELESS.

This is the closing exhortation given by the Holy Spirit to us concluding this remarkable relationship between PEACE and PURITY of heart. Being without spot and blameless denote, without question, the PURITY and CLEANNESS of the heart.

THERE ARE DEGREES OF PEACE

A. PERFECT PEACE

(a) **Isaiah 26:3: Thou wilt keep him in PERFECT PEACE whose mind is stayed on Thee, because he trusteth in Thee.**

(b) **Ezra 7:12:**

12 Artaxerxes, king of kings, unto Ezra the priest, a scribe of the law of the God of heaven, perfect peace, and at such a time.

B. ABUNDANCE OF PEACE

(a) **Psalm 37:11: The meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the ABUNDANCE of PEACE.**

(b) **Psalm 72:7: In HIS DAYS shall the righteous flourish; and ABUNDANCE of PEACE so long as the moon endureth.**

(c) **Jeremiah 33:6: Behold, I will bring it health and cure, and I will cure them, and will reveal unto them the ABUNDANCE of PEACE and TRUTH.**

C. GREAT PEACE

Psalm 119:165: GREAT PEACE have they that LOVE THY LAW, and nothing shall offend them.

D. PEACE THAT PASSETH UNDERSTANDING

Philippians 4:7: And the PEACE of GOD which PASSETH ALL UNDERSTANDING, shall keep your hearts and minds through CHRIST JESUS.

E. PEACE MULTIPLIED

2 Peter 1:2: Grace and PEACE BE MULTIPLIED unto you through the knowledge of God and our Lord Jesus Christ.

IN CLOSING: Here is a SCRIPTURAL PRAYER REQUEST which we are enjoined to put into practice. It is for the HOLY CITY of JERUSALEM in the land of Israel:

Psalm 122:6: PRAY for the PEACE of JERUSALEM, they shall prosper that love thee.

Then I love and appreciate **Proverbs 29:11: THE LORD will BLESS HIS PEOPLE with PEACE.**

When we enter into anyone's home, we are to BID GOD'S PEACE upon that home. Then, Jesus said something rather amazing in **Matthew 10:13: If that home is not worthy, let your PEACE return to you.**

FINALLY, we'd like to address those people who have BEAUTIFUL FEET. No, I'm not joking but am really serious about it. They are addressed in **Romans 10:15: This is what God's Word has to say about these good news carriers:**

Romans 10:15: HOW BEAUTIFUL are the feet of them that preach THE GOSPEL OF PEACE, and bring GLAD TIDINGS of GOOD THINGS!

INVITATION: If this message should be directed by our Lord into the hands of someone who does not have PEACE WITH GOD or THE PEACE OF GOD in your heart, allow me the privilege to show you how to be SAVED from your SINS and KNOW IT. Then you, too, will enjoy the PEACE that THE BLESSED LORD JESUS PURCHASED FOR YOU ON CALVARY'S CROSS.

THE SINNER'S GUIDE TO GOD:

1. All of us are sinners.

- **Romans 3:23: For all have sinned and come short of the glory of God.**
- **I John 1:8: If we say we haven't sinned, we have deceived ourselves.**

2. All of us need a SAVIOUR to redeem us from our sins.

- **John 1:29:** *The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.*
- **Romans 5:8:** *But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.*
- **1 Peter 2:24:** *Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.*

3. None of us can save ourselves from our sins.

- **Isaiah 64:4:** *For since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside thee, what he hath prepared for him that waiteth for him.*
- **Ephesians 2:8-9:**
8 *For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:*
9 *Not of works, lest any man should boast.*
- **Titus 3:5:** *Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost.*

4. God has provided us THE ONLY SAVIOUR FROM SIN. His Name IS JESUS, THE CHRIST.

5. This is what we all need to do in order to be SAVED from our SINS:

A. **REPENT** - telling God we're sorry for our sins and wanting to turn from them and forsake them.

- **Matthew 9:13:** *But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.*
- **Mark 1:15:** *And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.*

- **Acts 2:38:** *Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.*
- **Acts 18:28:** *For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was the Christ.*
- **Acts 20:21:** *Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.*

B. **BELIEVE:** Trust in, rely on, and place your full faith in JESUS to save you.

- **John 3:16:** *For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.*
- **John 20:31:** *But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.*
- **Acts 16:31:** *And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.*
- **Ephesians 2:8-9:**
8 *For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:*
9 *Not of works, lest any man should boast.*

C. **CALL ON JESUS** to SAVE YOU.

- **Acts 2:21:** *And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.*
- **Romans 10:13:** *For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.*

D. **RECEIVE HIM** into your heart by His Spirit.

John 1:12: *But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.*

E. **CONFESS HIM** openly with your mouth.

Romans 10:9-10:

9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Remember, dear friends who want to be saved from your sins, that GOD loves you. He proved that at CALVARY. The Lord Jesus paid your sin's debt there on the CROSS, for that was the main purpose of His coming into the world to seek and to save that which was lost. HE is ready and waiting to receive your prayer for forgiveness. Come to Him, while the DOOR OF MERCY is still wide open.

- **Luke 19:10: For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.**
- **Corinthians 6:2: He said: Now is the Acceptable time, now is the DAY of SALVATION. (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)**
- **Hebrews 4:7: Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.**

Please do not put it off, for that is what the devil will try to do — to influence you to delay. He knows that DELAY can be disastrous. So I beseech you not to play into his hands any longer. Here is proof. Read:

Luke 19:42: Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

They crossed the DEADLINE.

THE GOD-ORDAINED WAY TO CLOSE EACH SERVICE

Numbers 6:24: The Lord bless thee, and keep thee: The Lord make His face shine upon thee and be gracious unto thee; The Lord lift up His countenance upon thee, and GIVE THEE PEACE.

CLASS HOMEWORK: THE BEATITUDES
LESSON SEVEN: HOW TO LIVE A BLESSED AND HAPPY LIFE

1. True peace, lasting peace, and genuine peace is directly related to _____ of _____.
2. How does the Word of God describe the human heart in Jeremiah 17:10?
3. God has provided Divine Deliverance from sin. Write out Psalm 119:11, Romans 6:6, and 2 Timothy 4:18.
4. What law of God hath made us free from the law of sin and death?
5. What is the definition of free?
6. What was the price paid for our peace according to Colossians 1:20?
7. In the example on page 195, Judge John Kerr was the “Just” and the “Justifier” of the man who was the thief. How was he the “Just”?

The whole God Head was involved in the peace process.

8. What was God’s part?
9. What was Jesus’ part?
10. What was the Holy Spirit’s part?
11. What will be a major sign that the return of Jesus Christ is near?
12. What are the two greatest ingredients of peace?
13. Why do you think purity precedes peace?
14. If you are often offended, what would Psalm 119:165 say is the problem?
15. Explain what Romans 8:6 is saying?
16. Meditate on Romans 14:19. Tell me what you think a peacemaker focuses on in his relationships with others?

Lesson: #8
HOW TO LIVE THE “BLESSED” and “HAPPY” LIFE Around Those
Who are Not BLESSED and not HAPPY

The Lord Jesus Christ Who is THE HEAD of THE CHURCH wants His people to be “BE BLESSED” and to live a HAPPY and OVERCOMER'S LIFE. That is why HE gave us these Nine Be-Attitudes.

What is so amazing about EACH and EVERYONE of these Nine Be-Attitudes is: When each are only casually scanned over, none of them is very appealing to the carnal Christian, nor at all appetizing to the people of this world's system. It produces a very NEGATIVE response in the mind which uses carnal reasoning or mere human understanding as to how a person can be blessed by being:

- (a) Poor in spirit
- (b) Mourning
- (c) Meek
- (d) Hungry and thirsty
- (e) Merciful
- (f) Pure when that's an impossibility
- (g) Peacemakers. Well, that's “O.K.” when you succeed at it. But to be around troublemakers and those who are contentious, wrangling, arguing, fussing, or angry, that's enough to squeeze the PEACE out of anyone who even has a measure of PEACE. So, even that does not excite me to even want to be a Peacemaker, so they say.
- (h) PERSECUTED, now that's a killjoy in itself. How can anyone be BLESSED while being the TARGET of PERSECUTION? It doesn't make a lick of sense.

These things all confuse the minds of those who are inexperienced in what The Lord Jesus is really preaching and teaching, especially when we come now to the EIGHTH BE-ATTITUDE. This one really BUM-FUZZLES the minds of the people of the world, and even PUZZLES the minds of those Christians who have not as yet fulfilled their obedience to **Ephesians 4:22-24**, **Romans 6:1-22**, and **Colossians 3:5-10**.

Ephesians 4:22-24:

22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Romans 6:1-22:

- 1 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?**
- 2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?**
- 3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?**
- 4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.**
- 5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:**
- 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.**
- 7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.**
- 8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:**
- 9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.**
- 10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.**
- 11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.**
- 12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.**
- 13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.**
- 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.**
- 15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.**
- 16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?**
- 17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.**
- 18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.**
- 19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.**
- 20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.**
- 21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.**

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

Colossians 3:5-10:

5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:

6 For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience:

7 In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.

8 But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:

When those milestones have been crossed, then all of these NINE BE-ATTITUDES will make plenty of good sense, even this eighth one which is a real BUMMER.

Matthew 5:10: BLESSED are they which are PERSECUTED for RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake: for theirs is THE KINGDOM of HEAVEN.

WHAT!!!!!! BLESSED for being PERSECUTED?????? Why, that looks more like being CURSED rather than being BLESSED! I thought the Bible says in **Proverbs 14:34** that **RIGHTEOUSNESS EXALTETH a NATION; but SIN is a REPROACH to any people.**

If RIGHTEOUSNESS would exalt a NATION and the nation is made up of people, then those people should be EXALTED and not put down by persecution and persecutors. That poses another set of QUESTIONS like these:

QUESTIONS:

1. Why would anyone be PERSECUTED for RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE?
2. Who are these who are being PERSECUTED?
3. Who are their PERSECUTORS?
4. Why are they doing this PERSECUTING?
5. What are their methods or means of PERSECUTING?

NOTE: If any of you are wondering why we are approaching this particular SCRIPTURE from a negative standpoint which even appears cynical or as a scorners would, there is a real reason for this approach. It helps bring to light the very questions which are in most Christians' minds but don't have the courage to ask them.

Secondly, these are the actual questions which we ministers have been asked many times by those who were confused and lacked the proper understanding of God's Word. It is my happy privilege to share what God has given to us, and we hope and pray that it will be a spiritual blessing to your hearts.

QUESTION #1: WHY WOULD ANYONE BE PERSECUTED FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE?

In **Romans 5:7** it says: ***For SCARCELY for a RIGHTEOUS MAN will one die: yet peradventure for a GOOD MAN some would even dare to die.***

Here we can see that a person who is morally upright and of good behavior will turn many people on towards them in a very favorable manner while, on the other hand, the RIGHTEOUS PERSON will turn many people OFF, as though they are ALLERGIC towards that RIGHTEOUS man's RIGHTEOUSNESS.

What is it that TURNS one "OFF" and the other "ON"? There are several answers which are to be considered.

1. **Proverbs 29:27: An UNJUST MAN is an ABOMINATION to the JUST; and he that is UPRIGHT IN "THE WAY" is ABOMINATION to the wicked.**

(a) **Amos 5:10: They HATE him that rebuketh in the gate, and they abhor him that speaketh uprightly.**

(b) **Genesis 19:7:** Lot said to the homosexuals who were trying to barge their way into his home and bring out those HOLY MEN, those angels who were his Guests: ***I pray you, brethren, do not so wickedly.***

Note their response: **Genesis 19:9: Stand back. This fellow (i.e., Lot) came in to sojourn with us, now will he be our JUDGE? Now will we deal worse with thee than with them.**

(c) **2 Peter 2:8: That RIGHTEOUS man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his RIGHTEOUS soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds.**

(d) **Psalms 31:18: Let the lying lips be put to silence: which speak grievous things and proudly and contemptuously against the RIGHTEOUS.**

(e) **Psalms 34:21: Evil shall slay the wicked; and they that HATE THE RIGHTEOUS shall be desolate.**

(f) ***Psalms 37:31: The wicked watcheth the RIGHTEOUS, and seeketh to slay him.***

(g) ***Psalms 94:21: They gather themselves together against the soul of the RIGHTEOUS, and condemn the innocent blood.***

(h) ***Isaiah 57:1: The RIGHTEOUS perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart: and merciful men are taken away, none considering that THE RIGHTEOUS is taken away from the EVIL (i.e., the calamities, trouble, judgments) to come.***

QUESTION #2: Who are these that are being PERSECUTED?

Those who have been fulfilling BE-ATTITUDE number four which says in ***Matthew 5:6:***

Blessed are they which DO HUNGER and THIRST after RIGHTEOUSNESS, for they shall be FILLED.

They will be filled with that RIGHTEOUSNESS after which they are thirsting. And this curdles the blood of those who are unrighteous. It makes them feel very guilty and uncomfortable to be around such persons.

(a) ***Psalms 24:3-5:***

3 Who shall ascend into the hill of The Lord? Who shall stand in His HOLY PLACE?

4 He that hath CLEAN HANDS, and a PURE HEART, who hath not lifted up his soul to vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

5 He shall receive the blessing from the The Lord and RIGHTEOUSNESS from the God of his salvation.

(b) ***Isaiah 45:24: Surely, one shall say: In THE LORD have I RIGHTEOUSNESS and strength.***

(c) ***Isaiah 51:1: Hearken unto ME, ye that FOLLOW AFTER RIGHTEOUSNESS, ye that seek The Lord: look unto THE ROCK (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ) whence ye are hewn.***

(d) ***Isaiah 54:14: In RIGHTEOUSNESS shalt thou be established: thou shalt be far from oppression; for thou shalt not fear: and from TERROR: for it shall not come near thee.***

(e) ***Isaiah 54:17: No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the***

heritage of the servants of the LORD, AND THEIR RIGHTEOUSNESS is OF ME, saith THE LORD.

(f) **Psalms 15:1-3:**

1 LORD, who shall abide in THY TABERNACLE, who shall dwell in THY HOLY HILL?

ANSWER:

2 He that walketh uprightly, and WORKETH RIGHTEOUSNESS, and speaketh the truth in his heart.

3 He that backbiteth not with his tongue, nor doeth evil to his neighbor, nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbor.

Psalms 15:4-5:

4 In whose eyes A VILE PERSON is CONDEMNED; He honoreth them that fear The LORD.

5 He that sweareth to his own hurt, and changeth not. He that DOETH these things shall NEVER BE MOVED (i.e., backslide).

[Note: **He that sweareth to his own hurt and changeth not** means: When we make a promise, we are obligated to keep it even though we may regret it; that we (as it were) bit off more than we could chew. We promised more than we were capable of accomplishing apart from great sacrificial effort.]

(g) **Psalms 40:10: I have not HID Thy RIGHTEOUSNESS within my heart; I have declared Thy faithfulness and Thy Salvation: I have NOT CONCEALED Thy lovingkindness and THY TRUTH from the great congregation.**

Psalm 40:9: I have PREACHED RIGHTEOUSNESS in the great congregation: Lo, I have not refrained My lips, O LORD, Thou knowest.

NOTE: This is a Messianic Psalm and has reference to what The Lord Jesus did when HE came into the world. When HE preached RIGHTEOUSNESS and REPROVED SIN, HE got into hot water with those who were being convicted of their transgressions of God's Moral Standards of RIGHTEOUSNESS.

We read in **John 7:7** that The Lord Jesus said: **The world cannot hate you; but ME it HATETH, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are EVIL.**

(h) **Proverbs 15:12: A scorner loveth not one that reproveth him.**

(i) **Isaiah 29:20-21:**

20 For the terrible one is brought to nought, and the scorner is consumed, and all that watch for INIQUITY ARE CUT OFF:

21 That make a man an offender for a word, and lay a SNARE for him that REPROVETH in the gate, and turn aside the JUST for a thing of nought.

(j) **Proverbs 9:8: REBUKE a wise man, and he will love thee; REPROVE a scorner and he will hate thee.**

(k) **Leviticus 19:17-18:**

17 Thou shalt NOT HATE THY BROTHER in thine heart: thou shalt in any wise REBUKE thy neighbour, and not suffer (allow or permit) sin upon him.

18 Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the LORD.

(l) **Psalms 11:2-3:**

2 Lo, the WICKED bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may PRIVILY SHOOT at the UPRIGHT IN HEART.

3 If the foundations be destroyed, what can THE RIGHTEOUS DO?

(m) **Psalms 64:3-4:**

3 Who whet their TONGUE like a SWORD, and bend their bows to SHOOT their ARROWS, even BITTER WORDS:

4 that they may SHOOT in secret at THE PERFECT: suddenly do they shoot at him, and fear not.

(n) **Psalms 55:21: The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart: his words were softer than oil, yet were they drawn swords.**

(m) **Isaiah 5:23: Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the RIGHTEOUS from him!!!**

How do they do this? By discrediting the RIGHTEOUS and saying: If anyone claims to be righteous, holy, or pure, they're lying, for there is none righteous, no not one. We have the Bible to prove it! Then they quote from **Romans 3:10-11** or **I Kings 8:46; 2 Chronicles 6:36; Psalm 14:1 and 3; Ecclesiastes 7:20; or John 1:8:**

Romans 3:10-11:

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

1 Kings 8:46: If they sin against thee, (for there is no man that sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near.

2 Chronicles 6:36: If they sin against thee, (for there is no man which sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them over before their enemies, and they carry them away captives unto a land far off or near.

Psalm 14:1 and 3:

1 The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good.

3 They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

Ecclesiastes 7:20: For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.

1 John 1:8: If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

RESPONSE: What these sinning religion folks do not realize or recognize is that these are The Scriptures which confirm that ALL HAVE SINNED and come short of the glory of God. They prove that ALL PEOPLE need THE SAVIOUR and all need to be SAVED "FROM" their SINS, not "IN" them.

That is why we read in **Matthew 1:21: Thou shalt call His Name Jesus, for HE SHALL SAVE HIS PEOPLE "FROM" THEIR SINS.**

Acts 3:26: Unto you first God, having raised up HIS SON JESUS, sent HIM to BLESS YOU, (How?) in TURNING AWAY (How many?) everyone of you (FROM WHAT?) FROM HIS INIQUITIES.

Romans 8:3: GOD sending HIS OWN SON in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, CONDEMNED (not condoned, or excused, or justified) sin in the flesh; that the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after THE SPIRIT.

In reference to the Purpose of Christ's coming into the world, The Holy Spirit said in **Hebrew 9:26:**

26 For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to PUT AWAY SIN by the sacrifice of Himself.

QUESTION: What kind of PUTTING AWAY is that, or TURNING AWAY FROM, or SAVING His people FROM, or as we see again in **John 1:29:**

Behold the LAMB of God which TAKETH AWAY the sin of the world.

What kind of TAKING AWAY is this if we have to sin every day in thought, in word, and in deed?

WHAT IS MORE:

These Scriptures that are used to justify or condone or excuse their people for sinning are only an attempt to comfort and soothe the GUILTY CONSCIENCES and CONDEMNING CONSCIENCES of those who are indulging in sinful practices.

For those who are troubled by the convicting power of the Holy Spirit and are worried that they may lose their salvation, or backslide, and miss Heaven, to reassure them, they say: Once saved, always saved; regardless of what you do, you can never be lost.

MY RESPONSE:

OUR RESPONSE, OUR CONDUCT, and our ATTITUDES towards PERSECUTORS of us FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake in our PREACHING, TEACHING about RIGHTEOUSNESS, HEART PURITY, HOLINESS, and REPROVING SIN is going to be KIND, GRACIOUS, LOVING, GENTLE, and with TENDER MERCIES by the GRACE OF GOD. We're not here to engage in VERBAL COMBAT with either Christians who tolerate sinning, or with the world which loves sin like a hog loves slop.

To take the Bible and use it as a CLUB is not the proper attitude to manifest by either parties who would take issue with us. RIGHT ATTITUDES and RIGHTEOUS CONDUCT comes from RIGHT and RIGHTEOUS HEARTS.

I know what it means to be the recipient of even ministers who would take their BOWS and ARROWS, even BITTER WORDS, and TAKE POTSHOTS at us for PREACHING that we can live a life FREE FROM SIN.

(Note those Scriptures in j, k, and l above). When we gave them Scriptural proof, they reviled us and walked out of my study saying that they did not want to hear any more of that stuff. I'd like to know: Since when has GOD'S WORD become "STUFF"?

That's enough for now as we will be taking the matter up later when we get to the GENERAL TOPIC: OUR REACTIONS and RESPONSES to PERSECUTORS for RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake. First, we must be sure that it is for RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake, and not for our own BLUNDERS, IGNORANCE of THE SCRIPTURES, or our failure to PUT OFF THE OLD MAN with his deeds (**Ephesians 4:22**), or failure to put on THE NEW MAN which, after God, is created in RIGHTEOUSNESS and TRUE HOLINESS (**Ephesians 4:24**).

QUESTION # 3: Who are these PERSECUTORS?

These who make THE RIGHTEOUS SAD.

Ezekiel 13:22: Because with lies ye have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life.

Who are these who make the RIGHTEOUS their TARGET?

Psalm 11:2: For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart.

Psalm 64:3-4:

3 Who whet their tongue like a sword, and bend their bows to shoot their arrows, even bitter words:

4 That they may shoot in secret at the perfect: suddenly do they shoot at him, and fear not.

Who are these who make a PREY of those who DEPART FROM EVIL?

Isaiah 59:15: Yea, truth faileth; and he that departeth from evil maketh himself a prey: and the LORD saw it, and it displeased him that there was no judgment.

2 Corinthians 5:21: For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

A SIMPLE answer would be: Those who are living unrighteous lives are the ones who will persecute the RIGHTEOUS for their RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake. For, if they themselves were RIGHTEOUS, they would be BLESSING and not attempting to BLISTER THE RIGHTEOUS.

THE COMPLEX ANSWER is: There are, to the best of my knowledge and experience, FOUR CLASSES of PEOPLE who will PERSECUTE THE RIGHTEOUS for RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake.

FOUR CLASSES OF PERSECUTORS:

1. THOSE whose allegiance is to the DEVIL, called in Scripture, the children of the Devil or Belial.

Matthew 13:28-30:

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

Matthew 13:36-39:

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;

38 The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

39 The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

1 Kings 21:1-10:

1 And it came to pass after these things, that Naboth the Jezreelite had a vineyard, which was in Jezreel, hard by the palace of Ahab king of Samaria.

2 And Ahab spake unto Naboth, saying, Give me thy vineyard, that I may have it for a garden of herbs, because it is near unto my house: and I will give thee for it a better vineyard than it; or, if it seem good to thee, I will give thee the worth of it in money.

3 And Naboth said to Ahab, The LORD forbid it me, that I should give the inheritance of my fathers unto thee.

4 And Ahab came into his house heavy and displeased because of the word which Naboth the Jezreelite had spoken to him: for he had said, I will not give

thee the inheritance of my fathers. And he laid him down upon his bed, and turned away his face, and would eat no bread.

5 But Jezebel his wife came to him, and said unto him, Why is thy spirit so sad, that thou eatest no bread?

6 And he said unto her, Because I spake unto Naboth the Jezreelite, and said unto him, Give me thy vineyard for money; or else, if it please thee, I will give thee another vineyard for it: and he answered, I will not give thee my vineyard.

7 And Jezebel his wife said unto him, Dost thou now govern the kingdom of Israel? arise, and eat bread, and let thine heart be merry: I will give thee the vineyard of Naboth the Jezreelite.

8 So she wrote letters in Ahab's name, and sealed them with his seal, and sent the letters unto the elders and to the nobles that were in his city, dwelling with Naboth.

9 And she wrote in the letters, saying, Proclaim a fast, and set Naboth on high among the people:

10 And set two men, sons of Belial, before him, to bear witness against him, saying, Thou didst blaspheme God and the king. And then carry him out, and stone him, that he may die.

Deuteronomy 13:13: Certain men, the children of Belial, are gone out from among you, and have withdrawn the inhabitants of their city, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which ye have not known

1 Samuel 2:12: Now the sons of Eli were sons of Belial; they knew not the LORD.

Samuel 25:17: Now therefore know and consider what thou wilt do; for evil is determined against our master, and against all his household: for he is such a son of Belial, that a man cannot speak to him.

Judges 19:22: Now as they were making their hearts merry, behold, the men of the city, certain sons of Belial, beset the house round about, and beat at the door, and spake to the master of the house, the old man, saying, Bring forth the man that came into thine house, that we may know him.

Judges 20:13: Now therefore deliver us the men, the children of Belial, which are in Gibeah, that we may put them to death, and put away evil from Israel. But the children of Benjamin would not hearken to the voice of their brethren the children of Israel.

1 John 3:8-10:

8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

John 8:44: Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

Acts 13:10: And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?

Acts 26:18: To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

Matthew 12:24-28:

24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand:

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

2. BACKSLIDERS in HEART:

2 Peter 2:20-22:

20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

Hebrews 3:12-13:

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

Hebrews 6:4-6:

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come,

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

Hebrews 10:26-29:

26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

28 He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses:

29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

Ezekiel 3:20-21:

20 Again, When a righteous man doth turn from his righteousness, and commit iniquity, and I lay a stumbling-block before him, he shall die: because thou hast not given him warning, he shall die in his sin, and his righteousness which he hath done shall not be remembered; but his blood will I require at thine hand.

21 Nevertheless if thou warn the righteous man, that the righteous sin not, and he doth not sin, he shall surely live, because he is warned; also thou hast delivered thy soul.

Proverbs 14:14: The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways: and a good man shall be satisfied from himself.

Jeremiah 3:6-8:

6 The LORD said also unto me in the days of Josiah the king, Hast thou seen that which backsliding Israel hath done? she is gone up upon every high mountain and under every green tree, and there hath played the harlot.

7 And I said after she had done all these things, Turn thou unto me. But she returned not. And her treacherous sister Judah saw it.

8 And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also.

Jeremiah 3:11-14:

11 And the LORD said unto me, The backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah.

12 Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return, thou backsliding Israel, saith the LORD; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful, saith the LORD, and I will not keep anger for ever.

13 Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the LORD thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the LORD.

14 Turn, O backsliding children, saith the LORD; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion.

3. CHRISTIANS who still have UNCIRCUMCISED HEARTS

Romans 2:28-29:

28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

Colossians 2:11: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ.

4. RELIGIOUS PEOPLE who are NOT RIGHTEOUS

Acts 5:40-41:

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

41 And they departed from the Presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.

Acts 7:51-52:

51 Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

Acts 22:4: And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

1 Timothy 1:13: Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious: but I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief.

QUESTION #4: WHY ARE THEY DOING ALL THIS PERSECUTING?

The Lord Jesus said: **FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE.**

Why should RIGHTEOUSNESS upset or bother them, or anyone for that matter?

(a) Because they are ALLERGIC to RIGHTEOUSNESS, HOLINESS, and HEART PURITY.

(b) Because they feel unclean and ashamed when around HOLINESS PEOPLE, those that are PURE IN HEART, those who hungered and thirsted after RIGHTEOUSNESS and GOT FILLED UP with that for which they were hungering and thirsting.

(c) Because they are LIVING IN SIN and are CHAFFED and PRICKED in heart when they hear PREACHING and TEACHING on: FREEDOM FROM SIN, HOLINESS, and HEART PURITY. They are irritated and want to strike back by CONTRADICTING, ARGUING, CONTENDING, and wanting to DEBATE on these subjects. (They have seared consciences.)

(d) Because they want to DEFEND and JUSTIFY their POSITION or THEIR DOCTRINE that there is NO ONE RIGHTEOUS.

DEFINITIONS of SIN by Liberals

A. SIN is a MISTAKE to be corrected, and not an EVIL to be PUNISHED. *New Age* by Marianne Williamson in *Course on Miracles*.

B. A Metaphysics teacher said: "SIN is just like taking hold of the wrong end of the right thing." In other words: It is alright to SIN if you don't get dirty. For example: If you took hold of the inky end of a pen, you'll get your hand dirty. If you get hold of the right end, then you can write, and draw, or paint without getting messed up.

C. On page 226 we will be quoting from Dr. C. D. C., and here is his Outline before writing his article on the subject of Sinning Christians:

1. It distinctly recognizes the fact that all of God's people will sin.
2. That God's Chastisement will inevitably follow those who sin.
3. It assumes that God makes adequate provision for the forgiveness of those sins.
4. This provision is through the atoning sacrifices of The Temple.

Note: This is the Outline of this gentlemen's teachings on King Solomon's Prayer in **I Kings 8**. Then he continues his comments with these words:

- (a) If a man sins against his neighbor
- (b) If a man sins against God
- (c) If a man sins by commission
- (d) If a man sins by omission

The "IF" in this case does not imply DOUBT as to the FACT OF SIN. It only implies the probability as to the kind of sin and the form that SIN will take. It never implies any DOUBT that the SIN will take some form, whatever that may be. For it says in verse **I Kings 8:46**:

If they sin against Thee (for there is no man that sinneth not,) and Thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy . . .

It is reinforced by another declaration of Solomon in **Ecclesiastes 7:20**:

There is not a JUST man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.

It harmonizes with the three-fold declaration of the apostle John in **I John 1:8-10**:

***8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.
9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.***

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, HE is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word is not in us.

This is more than enough QUOTES from this C.D.C. preacher. He surely searched to find some Scriptures which he tries to use to support his SINNING RELIGION DOCTRINE.

OUR RESPONSE:

I guess there isn't anything wrong in asking QUESTIONS, is there? So let us try a few and see what we can come up with:

QUESTION:

Dr. C. D. C., Please tell us why you stopped your quotes in **I John 1:8-10** with that tenth verse? Why did you not go to the very next and following verse (**I John 2:1**) which says:

My little children, these things write I unto you, THAT YE SIN NOT. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.

Question: If we all are suppose to sin, as your article sets forth, why does the apostle John tell us NOT TO SIN?

Question: Did The Lord Jesus say in **John 15:7: If ye ABIDE in ME, and MY WORDS abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will and it shall be done unto you?**

Question: How can we know we're ABIDING IN HIM? What does **I John 3:6** have to say?

ANSWER:

- ***I John 3:6: Whosoever ABIDETH IN HIM SINNETH NOT: whosoever sinneth hath not seen HIM, neither known HIM.***
- ***I John 3:7: Little children, let no man DECEIVE YOU: he that DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS, is RIGHTEOUS, even as HE (The Lord Jesus Christ) is RIGHTEOUS.***

- ***I John 3:10: In this THE CHILDREN of GOD are manifest, and THE CHILDREN OF THE DEVIL: (UFFFFF!!!! Listen to this, now) Whosoever DOETH NOT RIGHTEOUSNESS is NOT OF GOD, neither he that loveth not his brother.***
- ***I John 5:18: We KNOW that whosoever is BORN OF GOD SINNETH NOT; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that Wicked One (i.e., the devil) toucheth him not.***

QUESTION: Dr. C. D. C., Why is it that you did not quote any of these five verses in your article condoning, justifying, and excusing the committing of sins?

COMMENT: Having observed the way this Dr. C. D. C. dealt with the subject of sin and how the apostle John dealt with it by the Holy Ghost, I prefer to stay with the apostle John and The Holy Ghost. How about you?

Especially since our SUBJECT is PERSECUTION for RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake, did you pay close attention as to HOW RIGHTEOUSNESS was woven so beautifully into the subject which deals with the SIN PROBLEM and its CONSEQUENCES?

HE tells us that THE "BORN AGAINERS" are NOT TO SIN. That those who are ABIDING IN CHRIST "SIN NOT".

QUESTION:

Now the BIG QUESTION: How does the LORD JESUS deal with the SIN QUESTION in **John 5:14, 8:10-11, and 8:32-36?**

ANSWER:

(a) ***John 5:14: Afterward JESUS findeth him in The Temple, and said unto him: Behold, thou art made WHOLE, "SIN NO MORE" lest a worse thing come unto thee.***

(b) ***John 8:10-11:***
10 Woman, where are those thine accusers? Hath no man condemned thee?
11 She said: No man, LORD! And JESUS said unto her: Neither do I condemn thee: GO, and SIN NO MORE!!!!

(c) ***John 8:32-36:***
32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.
33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

What!!!! Did I not hear some folks say that we sin every day in thought, in word, and in deed, and that so long as we're here on this earth we cannot help but sinning? Isn't this the very opposite of what CHRIST just said?

How did the LORD JESUS CHRIST handle the CHURCH of THYATIRA'S SINNING SITUATION? Since HE is the HEAD of THE CHURCH, maybe we can get some valuable knowledge on the RIGHT WAY TO DEAL WITH SIN, don't you think so?

Oh, I just remembered an experience which we had while preaching a Revival in California, just south of Los Angeles in a Four Square Church. Most generally they're a fine Holiness Denomination, but in this church, the pastor was SOFT ON SIN. And while preaching up a storm, as they'd say in the south, we really got into HOT WATER with this pastor there. We were raising up GOD'S MORAL PLUMBLINE in the midst of the congregation and brushed somebody's fur the wrong way. He was as grouchy as a bear being weaned of her cubs. The Board Member who invited me there let me know after the service that I was up to my neck in HOT WATER, so we'd better ease on out after the meeting.

On the way home we were discussing the preaching, and he told me that we had ripped the covers off of some sinning church members. That was what got us into HOT WATER. So, we told this brother:

It has been my prayer to the Lord that HE would make me like a GOOD TEA KETTLE. He asked: How so? We said: Well, it can be up to its neck in HOT WATER, yet still goes on WHISTLING and SINGING. You know, our ATTITUDES — when under pressure — really give us away. They tell where we're at spiritually.

Is the FRUIT of our lips NICE when theirs is nasty? If so, we've got the VICTORY.

Well, LORD JESUS, would you please tell us how You handled that SINNING CHURCH AT Thyatira?

Now, listen to what THE LORD JESUS SAID:

Revelation 2:20-23:

20 Notwithstanding I have a FEW things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calls herself a Prophetess, to TEACH and to SEDUCE

MY SERVANTS (i.e., the preachers there) **to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.**

21 I gave her space to REPENT of her FORNICATION; and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will CAST HER INTO A BED, and them that COMMIT ADULTERY with her into GREAT TRIBULATION, except they REPENT of their deeds.

23 And (that's not all) **I will KILL her children with DEATH; and all the churches shall know that I AM HE which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto EVERYONE of YOU ACCORDING TO YOUR WORKS.**

WOW!!! LORD JESUS, you are sure rough on SIN!!!

Lord Jesus, how come ALL YOUR PREACHERS don't deal with SIN just like YOU DO?

I LOVE RIGHTEOUSNESS and HATE INIQUITY. Hebrews 1:9a (In my spiritual ear, I can just hear Him saying this. And, when My PREACHERS become partakers of MY DIVINE NATURE according to **2 Peter 1:4**, they will LOVE what I LOVE, and HATE what I HATE.)

Paul, are you one of the LORD'S preachers? How do you handle the "SIN" question?

I Corinthians 15:34: AWAKE TO RIGHTEOUSNESS and SIN NOT!!! For some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

Say, apostle Paul, you sound very much like The Lord Jesus preaching it. Just how did you advise young ministers about dealing with sin in the churches?

I Timothy 5:20: THEM THAT SIN "REBUKE" before all, that others also may fear.

Lord have mercy, brother Paul. Do you know that will get some church members hot under the collar, and they might try to knock our block off? Or, they might try to dust the floor with us and get our pretty clothes dirty?

Paul, can't you ease off on this SIN PROBLEM A LITTLE?

No, preacher, I haven't finished my sermon on **I Timothy 5:20**. Here is the rest of the message:

I Timothy 5:21-22:

21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, NEITHER BE PARTAKER of OTHER MEN'S SINS: KEEP THYSELF PURE.

O brother Paul, you are now LEGISLATING HOLINESS, and that doesn't go well with this generation. Don't you know that?

Guess we'll have to turn to another apostle and see if he will be a little more diplomatic on this so touchy a subject.

Brother Peter, what do you have to say on this SUBJECT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, SIN, and HEART PURITY?

(a) ***I Peter 1:15-16:***

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

16 Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.

(b) ***I Peter 1:22: Seeing ye have PURIFIED your souls in OBEYING THE TRUTH through the SPIRIT unto unfeigned love of the brethren, SEE THAT YE LOVE ONE ANOTHER with a PURE HEART FERVENTLY.***

(c) ***I Peter 2:11: Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, ABSTAIN FROM FLESHLY LUSTS which WAR against the soul.***

(d) ***I Peter 3:10-12:***

10 For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile:

11 Let him ESCHEW EVIL, and DO GOOD; let him seek peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are over the RIGHTEOUS, and his ears are open unto their PRAYERS: BUT, the FACE OF THE LORD is against them that do evil.

(e) ***I Peter 4:1: Forasmuch as CHRIST hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves with the same mind. For, he that hath SUFFERED in the flesh, hath CEASED FROM SIN!!!***

WHAT!!! Holy horrors!!!! Not "CEASED FROM SIN"! Don't you know, brother Peter, that twenty-first century Christians can't do that? They say they can't cease from sinning until they die.

Do you know what the Apostle Peter's response to that is?

It is recorded in **2 Peter 2:1-22**. Here are just several excerpts from his sermon:

- (a) **2 Peter 2:1: But there were FALSE PROPHETS also among the people, even as there SHALL BE FALSE TEACHERS among you, who privily (secretly and slyly) bring in damnable heresies, even denying the LORD that bought them.**
- (b) **2 Peter 2:2: Many shall follow their PERNICIOUS (i.e., evil, hurtful, malicious, destructive, wicked, deadly) ways; by reason of whom THE WAY OF TRUTH shall be evil spoken of.**
- (c) **2 Peter 2:4: And if GOD SPARED NOT THE ANGELS THAT SINNED . . .**
- (d) **2 Peter 2:5: And SPARED NOT THE OLD WORLD, but saved NOAH the eighth person, a PREACHER OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, bringing in the flood upon the world of the UNGODLY.**
- (e) **2 Peter 2:6: Turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ASHES, condemned them with an overthrow. Making them an EXAMPLE unto those that AFTER “SHOULD LIVE UNGODLY”.**
- (f) **2 Peter 2:9: The Lord knoweth how to DELIVER THE GODLY out of temptations, but TO RESERVE THE UNJUST unto THE DAY OF JUDGMENT to be PUNISHED.**
- (g) **2 Peter 2:13-14:**
13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. SPOTS they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while THEY FEAST WITH YOU;
14 Having eyes FULL OF ADULTRY, and THAT CANNOT CEASE FROM SIN; BEGUILING UNSTABLE SOULS: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children.

Say preachers and teachers who are SOFT ON SIN, this Holy Ghost-filled man of God is quoting your doctrine and putting it in a UNFAVORABLE POSITION. HE is BLACK-BALLING that sinning religion doctrine and declares that such have FORSAKEN THE RIGHT WAY in **verse 15**.

Hear now his conclusion in **verse 21**:

- (h) **2 Peter 2:21: For it had been BETTER for them NOT TO HAVE KNOWN THE WAY OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, than, after they have known it, to turn from THE HOLY COMMANDMENT delivered unto them.**

QUESTION #5: WHAT ARE THEIR METHODS AND MEANS OF PERSECUTING THE RIGHTEOUS FOR THEIR RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE?

1. *1 Peter 4:1-5:*

1 Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin;

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in LASCIVIOUSNESS, LUSTS, EXCESS OF WINE, REVELLINGS, BANQUETINGS, AND ABOMINABLE IDOLATRIES:

4 Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you.

5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

2. *1 Peter 3:16: Having a good conscience, that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evildoers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ.*

3. *Acts 13:45: They were filled with envy, and spoke against those things that were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.*

4. *Psalms 56:5: Every day they WREST my words: all their thoughts are against me for evil.*

5. *Hebrews 11:36-37:*

36 Others had trial of CRUEL MOCKINGS and SCOURGINGS, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment:

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

6. *IMPRISONED — 1 Kings 22:27; 2 Chronicles 16:10; Jeremiah 20:2; 32:2; Acts 4:2; 12:1-19*

1 Kings 22:27: And say, Thus saith the king, Put this fellow in the prison, and feed him with bread of affliction and with water of affliction, until I come in peace.

2 Chronicles 16:10: *Then Asa was wroth with the seer, and put him in a prison house; for he was in a rage with him because of this thing. And Asa oppressed some of the people the same time.*

Jeremiah 20:2: *Then Pashur smote Jeremiah the prophet, and put him in the stocks that were in the high gate of Benjamin, which was by the house of the LORD.*

Jeremiah 32:2: *For then the king of Babylon's army besieged Jerusalem: and Jeremiah the prophet was shut up in the court of the prison, which was in the king of Judah's house.*

Acts 4:2: *Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead.*

Acts 12:1-19:

1 *Now about that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church.*

2 *And he killed James the brother of John with the sword.*

3 *And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also. (Then were the days of unleavened bread.)*

4 *And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep him; intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.*

5 *Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.*

6 *And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains: and the keepers before the door kept the prison.*

7 *And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.*

8 *And the angel said unto him, Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals. And so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.*

9 *And he went out, and followed him; and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he saw a vision.*

10 *When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city; which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street; and forthwith the angel departed from him.*

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark; where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knew Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened the door, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he, beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judaea to Caesarea, and there abode.

7. BEATEN. Matthew 13:9; Acts 5:40; 16:22, 27; 18:17; 22:19; Mark 12:5

Matthew 13:9: Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Acts 5:40: And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

Acts 16:22, 27:

22 And the multitude rose up together against them: and the magistrates rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat them.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

Acts 18:17: *Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment seat. And Gallio cared for none of those things.*

Acts 22:19: *And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned and beat in every synagogue them that believed on thee:*

Mark 12:5: *And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some.*

8. **TAKE POT SHOTS at the RIGHTEOUS, even BITTER WORDS.** See Psalm 64:3; 11:2; Jeremiah 18:18 — (smite him with our tongues)

Psalm 64:3: *Who whet their tongue like a sword, and bend their bows to shoot their arrows, even bitter words:*

Psalm 11:2: *For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart.*

Jeremiah 18:18: *Then said they, Come, and let us devise devices against Jeremiah; for the law shall not perish from the priest, nor counsel from the wise, nor the word from the prophet. Come, and let us smite him with the tongue, and let us not give heed to any of his words.*

9. **MAKE ATTEMPTS TO DISCREDIT AND RIDICULE THE RIGHTEOUS.**

They make an attempt to take away their righteousness from them, as prophesied in:

Isaiah 5:23: *Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!*

10. **MAKE THE RIGHTEOUS a PREY**

Isaiah 59:15: *Yea, truth faileth; and he that departeth from evil maketh himself a prey: and the LORD saw it, and it displeased him that there was no judgment.*

11. **LAUGH THEM TO SCORN.**

Job 12:4: *I am as one mocked of his neighbour, who calleth upon God, and he answereth him: the just upright man is laughed to scorn.*

12. WILL DRIVE THE RIGHTEOUS FROM THEIR HOMES.

Acts 8:1: *And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judaea and Samaria, except the apostles.*

QUESTION: What is it that **MOTIVATES** such nasty behavior?

ANSWER: 1. **HATRED** as seen in **I Kings 22:8; 2 Chronicles 18:7; John 3:20; 7:7,** and **15:18-19**

I Kings 22:8: *And the king of Israel said unto Jehoshaphat, There is yet one man, Micaiah the son of Imla, by whom we may enquire of the LORD: but I hate him; for he doth not prophesy good concerning me, but evil. And Jehoshaphat said, Let not the king say so.*

2 Chronicles 18:7: *And the king of Israel said unto Jehoshaphat, There is yet one man, by whom we may enquire of the LORD: but I hate him; for he never prophesied good unto me, but always evil: the same is Micaiah the son of Imla. And Jehoshaphat said, Let not the king say so.*

John 3:20: *For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.*

John 7:7: *The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.*

John 15:18-19:

18 *If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.*

19 *If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.*

2. ENVY and JEALOUSY

Matthew 27:18: *For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.*

3. **RESENTMENT - ILL WILL** which leads to **ANGER** and **WRATH**, which leads to vicious conduct.

MESSAGE TO THE “PERSECUTED” for “RIGHTEOUSNESS” SAKE:

YOUR ATTITUDES, YOUR CONDUCT, AND YOUR RESPONSES TO ATTACKS and ATTACKERS WILL REVEAL THE DEGREE AND DEPTH of YOUR TRUE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF HEART.

PUTTING IT IN QUITE ANOTHER WAY: THE DEGREE or DEPTHS of our RIGHTEOUSNESS is DETERMINED and DETECTED by our ATTITUDES and ACTIONS or REACTIONS towards our PERSECUTORS.

APPROPRIATE RESPONSES TO PERSECUTORS

1. *Matthew 5:44-45:*

44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

2. *Romans 12:19-21:*

19 Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written: vengeance is Mine; I will repay, saith The Lord.

20 Therefore, if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing, thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

3. *Acts 5:40-41:*

⁴⁰ And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and BEATEN THEM, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

⁴¹ And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.

4. *1 Peter 2:19-22:*

19 For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps:

22 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.

5. ***1 Peter 3:14: But if ye SUFFER for RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake, happy are ye: and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled.***

6. ***1 Peter 4:16: If any one suffer as a CHRISTIAN, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify GOD on this behalf.***

7. ***Hebrews 10:34: Ye took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in yourselves that ye have in Heaven a better and an enduring substance.***

8. ***Romans 8:35: Who (or what) shall SEPARATE US FROM THE LOVE OF Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or PERSECUTION, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?***

Romans 8:37: Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through HIM that loved us.

9. ***Romans 12:14: BLESS them which PERSECUTE you: BLESS, and curse not.***

IN CONCLUSION:

Christ prophesied and pronounced a special BLESSING upon those who are PERSECUTED for righteousness' sake, and that is not all. He PROMISED those who take persecution graciously that theirs ***is THE KINGDOM of HEAVEN.***

I don't know of anyone down here on this earth GIVING KINGDOMS AWAY, much less than for such a purpose as this: FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE. CHRIST offers a BIG CHUNK of REAL ESTATE to HIS CHILDREN whom HE has made Righteous. BLESS HIS PRECIOUS NAME FOREVER!!!!

RIGHTEOUSNESS of heart is one of the PRIMARY OBJECTIVES in our LORD'S PURPOSE in redeeming us from our sin. HE places a high PREMIUM on RIGHTEOUSNESS of HEART, HE being the LORD our RIGHTEOUSNESS; and The Scriptures declare that THE RIGHTEOUS LORD LOVETH RIGHTEOUSNESS:

Psalm 11:7: For the righteous LORD loveth righteousness; his countenance doth behold the upright.

Hebrews 1:9: Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

That is why He is bequeathing THE KINGDOM to those who enter into THIS PRIZED RIGHTEOUS STATE, for RIGHTEOUSNESS exalteth not only a NATION, but those

individuals who make up that nation. The latter part of the verse says: ***But SIN is a REPROACH to any people.***

Proverbs 14:34: Righteousness exalteth a nation: but sin is a reproach to any people.

Personally, I'd rather BEAR THE PERSECUTIONS and PUT UP with the PERSECUTORS for RIGHTEOUSNESS' sake than to compromise our proclamation of RIGHTEOUSNESS in order to lessen the AMOUNT OF PERSECUTIONS coming from those who are ALLERGIC to RIGHTEOUSNESS.

When our blessed Lord promised to those who HUNGER and THIRST after RIGHTEOUSNESS that they will be FILLED, He is encouraging us to really get in there and seek RIGHTEOUSNESS with all of our HEART. To have a RIGHTEOUS HEART, free from CONDEMNATION, is a glorious BLESSING in itself. Then, to be promised THE KINGDOM besides for having obtained that for which HE urges us to seek after, that is a SPECIAL BONUS BENEFIT.

We have made this personal discovery, that — to lessen PERSECUTION — the more shut-mouthed we are in teaching and preaching RIGHTEOUSNESS to the GREAT CONGREGATION (**Psalm 40:9**) the less PERSECUTION followed. When we went to **verse 10**, The Lord Jesus is saying:

Psalms 40:10: I HAVE NOT HID THY RIGHTEOUSNESS within MY HEART.

That tells me that to be SHUT-MOUTHED about TESTIFYING of RIGHTEOUSNESS, or failing to PREACH IT or TEACH IT, must be wrong. Else, why would Christ have said what HE did say in this tenth verse?

Sooooo, we'll put up with Dr. C. D. C.'s honking his horn on **I Kings 8:46; Psalm 14:1; and Ecclesiastes 7:20.**

1 Kings 8:46: If they sin against thee, (for there is no man that sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near.

Psalm 14:1: The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good.

Ecclesiastes 7:20: For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.

We'll continue honking our horn on this:

1. ***1 John 2:29: Now little children, abide in Him that, when HE shall appear, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before HIM at HIS COMING. If ye know that HE (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ) is RIGHTEOUS, ye know that EVERYONE that "DOETH" RIGHTEOUSNESS is BORN of HIM.***
2. ***1 John 3:7: Little children, let no man deceive you: he that "DOETH RIGHTEOUSNES" is RIGHTEOUS, even as he is RIGHTEOUS.***
3. ***Psalms 106:3: BLESSED are they that KEEP JUDGMENT (i.e., justice) and that "DOETH RIGHTEOUSNESS" at ALL TIMES.***
4. ***1 Corinthians 15:34: AWAKE TO RIGHTEOUSNESS and SIN NOT: for some have not the knowledge of GOD, I speak this to your shame.***
5. ***Isaiah 32:17: The WORK OF RIGHTEOUSNESS shall be PEACE; and the effect of RIGHTEOUSNESS quietness and assurance FOREVER!***

AMEN!!!

CLASS HOMEWORK: THE BEATITUDES
LESSON EIGHT: HOW TO LIVE THE BLESSED AND HAPPY LIFE
AROUND THOSE WHO ARE NOT BLESSED AND HAPPY

1. The righteous man is persecuted by the unrighteous. Write out Proverbs 29:27 and Amos 5:10. These are the reasons why.
2. What curdles the blood of those who are unrighteous, and makes them feel very guilty and uncomfortable to be around such persons as ourselves?
3. What does *"He that sweareth to his own hurt and changeth not"* mean?
4. In your own words, what does Proverbs 9:8 say about a wise man? about the scorner?
5. Some religions are "sinning" religions. What do they teach?
6. What is the scriptural answer to these sinning religions that claim that, regardless of what you do, you can never be lost?
7. We must be sure that it (persecution) is for RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE, and not for our own _____, _____ of the _____.
8. What four classes of people persecute the righteous for righteousness' sake?
9. Liberals say that we sin every day in thought word and deed. But what does the Word say in I John 5:18?
10. _____, when under pressure, really give us away.
11. Write out Revelation 2:20-23 and meditate on this scripture.
12. I Corinthians 15:34 says: _____ to _____ and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.
13. In your own words, what does I Timothy 5:22 say? I Peter 4:1?
14. List 5 methods the unrighteous use to persecute the righteous.
15. What three things motivate the nasty behavior of those that persecute us?

16. The _____ or _____ of our righteousness is _____ and _____ by our attitudes and actions our reactions towards our persecutors.

17. Of the nine responses to persecutors listed on pages 237-238, which two do you believe speak especially to you?

18. To be _____ about testifying of righteousness, or failing to preach it or teach it, must be wrong.

LESSON: #9
HOW TO BE HAPPY and LIVE THE “BLESSED” LIFE

Matthew 5:11: BLESSED are ye, when people shall REVILE you, and PERSECUTE you, and shall say ALL MANNER of EVIL against you FALSELY, for “MY SAKE”.

THEME: “REVILED” and “PERSECUTED” for THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S sake.

INTRODUCTION:

Some of our Bible Teachers have expressed the idea that our Lord Jesus should have combined these last two BLESSEDS since they deal with practically the very same subject matter. The Lord Jesus is much wiser than we will ever be, and HE put these NINE BE-ATTITUDES together exactly as they ought to be discoursed.

Although there is a similarity in these two verses, the contents are very different in what MOTIVATES the PERSECUTIONS.

In **verse 10**, those who are allergic to RIGHTEOUSNESS DOCTRINE being expounded are those who are doing this persecuting. These who are doing all this PERSECUTING are more than not amongst the professing Christians. That which fans their fires of persecution are other Christians who are preaching and teaching HOLINESS, HEART PURITY, RIGHTEOUSNESS, and GODLINESS of LIFE as a necessity to make it into the KINGDOM OF HEAVEN and into HEAVEN ITSELF.

Hebrews 12:14 is one Scripture as a case in point: ***Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.***

Christ is coming for a GLORIOUS CHURCH not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be HOLY and WITHOUT BLEMISH as stated in **Ephesians 5:25-27**:

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

27 That he might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

Christ is going to present us to HIMSELF also HOLY and UNBLAMEABLE and UNREPROVEABLE in HIS SIGHT according to **Colossians 1:22: In the body of his**

flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unreprieveable in His sight.

I Thessalonians 3:13: To the end HE may establish your hearts UNBLAMEABLE IN HOLINESS before GOD, even our FATHER, at the coming of our LORD JESUS CHRIST with all His saints.

I Thessalonians 4:3-7:

3 For this is the WILL of GOD even your Sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication;

4 that EVERY ONE OF YOU should know how to possess his vessel in Sanctification (i.e., clean, pure, free from sin) and honor.

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

2 Chronicles 29:5-18 shows Sanctification as a CLEANSING.

2 Chronicles 29:5-18:

5 And said unto them, Hear me, ye Levites, sanctify now yourselves, and sanctify the house of the LORD God of your fathers, and carry forth the filthiness out of the holy place.

6 For our fathers have trespassed, and done that which was evil in the eyes of the LORD our God, and have forsaken him, and have turned away their faces from the habitation of the LORD, and turned their backs.

7 Also they have shut up the doors of the porch, and put out the lamps, and have not burned incense nor offered burnt offerings in the holy place unto the God of Israel.

8 Wherefore the wrath of the LORD was upon Judah and Jerusalem, and he hath delivered them to trouble, to astonishment, and to hissing, as ye see with your eyes.

9 For, lo, our fathers have fallen by the sword, and our sons and our daughters and our wives are in captivity for this.

10 Now it is in mine heart to make a covenant with the LORD God of Israel, that his fierce wrath may turn away from us.

11 My sons, be not now negligent: for the LORD hath chosen you to stand before him, to serve him, and that ye should minister unto him, and burn incense.

12 Then the Levites arose, Mahath the son of Amasai, and Joel the son of Azariah, of the sons of the Kohathites: and of the sons of Merari, Kish the son of Abdi, and Azariah the son of Jehalelel: and of the Gershonites; Joah the son of Zimmah, and Eden the son of Joah:

13 And of the sons of Elizaphan; Shimri, and Jeiel: and of the sons of Asaph; Zechariah, and Mattaniah:

14 And of the sons of Heman; Jehiel, and Shimei: and of the sons of Jeduthun; Shemaiah, and Uzziel.

15 And they gathered their brethren, and sanctified themselves, and came, according to the commandment of the king, by the words of the LORD, to cleanse the house of the LORD.

16 And the priests went into the inner part of the house of the LORD, to cleanse it, and brought out all the uncleanness that they found in the temple of the LORD into the court of the house of the LORD. And the Levites took it, to carry it out abroad into the brook Kidron.

17 Now they began on the first day of the first month to sanctify, and on the eighth day of the month came they to the porch of the LORD: so they sanctified the house of the LORD in eight days; and in the sixteenth day of the first month they made an end.

18 Then they went in to Hezekiah the king, and said, We have cleansed all the house of the LORD, and the altar of burnt offering, with all the vessels thereof, and the shewbread table, with all the vessels thereof.

2 Chronicles 30:15-19 and 31:18 show sanctification as an honor.

2 Chronicles 30:15-19:

15 Then they killed the passover on the fourteenth day of the second month: and the priests and the Levites were ashamed, and sanctified themselves, and brought in the burnt offerings into the house of the LORD.

16 And they stood in their place after their manner, according to the law of Moses the man of God: the priests sprinkled the blood, which they received of the hand of the Levites.

17 For there were many in the congregation that were not sanctified: therefore the Levites had the charge of the killing of the passovers for every one that was not clean, to sanctify them unto the LORD.

18 For a multitude of the people, even many of Ephraim, and Manasseh, Issachar, and Zebulun, had not cleansed themselves, yet did they eat the passover otherwise than it was written. But Hezekiah prayed for them, saying, The good LORD pardon every one

19 That prepareth his heart to seek God, the LORD God of his fathers, though he be not cleansed according to the purification of the sanctuary.

2 Chronicles 31:18: And to the genealogy of all their little ones, their wives, and their sons, and their daughters, through all the congregation: for in their set office they sanctified themselves in holiness.

Luke 1:6: And they (Zacharias and Elizabeth) were both RIGHTEOUS before God, walking in all the COMMANDMENTS and ORDINANCES of THE LORD BLAMELESS.

Luke 1:74-75:

74 That He (GOD) would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might SERVE HIM without fear,

75 in HOLINESS and RIGHTEOUSNESS before HIM all the days of our life.

Hebrews 1:8: Thy throne O GOD is forever and ever: a Sceptre of RIGHTEOUSNESS is the Sceptre of Thy Kingdom.

Psalm 23:1, 3:

1 THE LORD is my SHEPHERD; I shall not want.

3 He restoreth my soul; HE LEADETH me in the PATHS of RIGHTEOUSNESS for His Name's sake.

Therefore, we must conclude: If I'm a true FOLLOWER of CHRIST according to **John 10:11, 10:14; and 10:27 . . .**

- **John 10:11: I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.**
- **John 10:14: I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.**
- **John 10:27: My sheep hear MY VOICE, and I know them, and THEY FOLLOW ME.**

. . . then I will of necessity be walking in the PATHS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS and not living in unrighteousness.

I will say a hearty AMEN to **1 Corinthians 15:34** as we're commanded to: **AWAKE TO RIGHTEOUSNESS and SIN NOT.**

CHRIST LOVES RIGHTEOUSNESS and HATES INIQUITY.

Hebrews 1:9: Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

Since we are to be PARTAKERS of the DIVINE NATURE, according to **2 Peter 1:4**, we also will LOVE RIGHTEOUSNESS and HATE INIQUITY, just as our MASTER does.

2 Peter 1:4: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

Is that so in your life? It should also apply to my life, don't you think? We only brought these Scriptures in to reveal what fans up FURY in some ranks.

We return to our TEXT where we now discover the REVILINGS and PERSECUTIONS coming from a difference CAUSE. They come against us for THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S SAKE.

In the previous Be-Attitude, the main cause of the persecutions was motivated by PEOPLE who were living unrighteous lives and were attacking those who were living the RIGHTEOUS LIFE STYLE. Now this REVILING and PERSECUTING is coming from an entirely different MOTIVE.

These persecutions are FOR "JESUS" sake. The PERSECUTIONS are similar, alright; therefore they are related to the previous verse which deals with "**FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE**". However, in this verse, the persecutions relate specifically to that phase of RIGHTEOUSNESS that comes from The LORD JESUS CHRIST as our IMPUTED RIGHTEOUSNESS.

The following verses will help to explain this to you a little better.

(a) **Jeremiah 23:6: In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely; and this is HIS NAME whereby HE shall be called: THE LORD our RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

Note: This is a prophecy of the Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, and His Name and His title is: The LORD our RIGHTEOUSNESS. This is that "IMPUTED" RIGHTEOUSNESS which we receive from the Lord Jesus Christ which is accredited to our account who were once bankrupt as far as being righteous was concerned.

(b) **Jeremiah 33:15-16:**

15 In those days, and at THAT TIME, will I cause THE BRANCH OF RIGHTEOUSNESS to grow up unto David; and HE shall execute Judgment (i.e., Justice) and RIGHTEOUSNESS in the land.

16 In THOSE DAYS (i.e., when CHRIST was born in Bethlehem - Mathew 2:1-6 and Micah 5:2) shall JUDAH be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is THE NAME wherewith "she" shall be CALLED: THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.

NOTE: This verse and the preceding verse are so important, that the Holy Spirit will run it by us again in saying the very same thing. So, if you overlooked it on your first study of these Scriptures, HE will bring it to us again, hopeful that it does not escape our attention on this second round.

Take notice of only one little word that is different in the second verse from the quoted verse in **Jeremiah 23:5-6**:

Jeremiah 23:5-6:

5 Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth.

6 In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.

In **Jeremiah 23:5-6**, the PRONOUN "HE" is given, for it relates to CHRIST, personally.

In **Jeremiah 33:15-16**, "SHE" is given, for it relates to The CHURCH, the BODY OF CHRIST, composed of both Jews and Gentiles, the BRIDE OF CHRIST — we who have received Christ's righteousness imputed to us.

Listen to the following verses which will give additional insight and clarification to what is here being said. The further we go in studying The Word, the more LIGHT is shown upon our path. The Bible is a PROGRESSIVE REVELATION of DIVINE TRUTH.

(c) Isaiah 54:17: No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in Judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord; and THEIR RIGHTEOUSNESS IS OF ME, saith THE LORD.

QUESTION: Did you take notice where our RIGHTEOUSNESS comes from? What its source actually is?

(d) Psalm 24:5: He shall receive the "BLESSING" from THE LORD, and

“*RIGHTEOUSNESS*” from The God of his salvation.

(e) *Matthew 6:33: But seek ye FIRST The Kingdom of God and “HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS” and all these things shall be added unto you.*

(f) *Romans 3:21-22:*

21 But now the RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;

22 Even the RIGHTEOUSNESS which is by faith of JESUS CHRIST unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

(g) *I Corinthians 1:30: But of HIM are ye in CHRIST JESUS, Who of God is made unto us wisdom, RIGHTEOUSNESS, sanctification, and Redemption.*

(h) *Philippians 1:11: Being filled with the fruits of RIGHTEOUSNESS which are BY JESUS CHRIST, unto The praise of God.*

(i) *2 Corinthians 5:21: For HE (i.e., GOD ALMIGHTY) hath made HIM (i.e., THE LORD JESUS CHRIST) to be sin for us, Who knew no sin, that we might be made the RIGHTEOUSNESS of GOD in HIM.*

THE LORD GOD and our LORD JESUS CHRIST are our DIVINE SOURCES of our RIGHTEOUSNESS.

Therefore, when we're persecuted or reviled for JESUS' sake, you can see that the persecuting and reviling makes us a TARGET for those who are unrighteous and ungodly to shoot at us.

When we fully are AWAKENED to this FACT, we will not be intimidated or carry around hurt feelings due to the persecutions and revilings of which we are the recipients; but we're told by THE LORD JESUS in the following verse what we are supposed to do.

1 Corinthians 4:12b: . . . being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it.

(We hope and pray these comments will help give a little better BACKGROUND study on our present study on the Ninth Be-Attitude. Before we come to the main subject of BEING “REVILED” for THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S SAKE, please bare with me for a little, while we call several things to your attention concerning this Ninth Be-Attitude which may escape someone's attention and might prove a great blessing to all of us while being refreshed to our memories.)

1. Did you observe in this 9th Be-Attitude that CHRIST is directing these last two verses very personally to us? HE said: **BLESSED ARE YE**. Each of the other eight Be-Attitudes are indirect references. This last Be-Attitude is PERSONALIZED and directed immediately to the “REVILED” and the “PERSECUTED” for HIS SAKE.

2. Some people in the cults who are scoffed and ridiculed for their perverted beliefs try to take comfort in this last Be-Attitude. They, however, need to take a much closer look at these two verses. The Lord Jesus said two qualifying reasons are necessary for us to be BLESSED and ENJOY A GREAT REWARD IN HEAVEN. Namely:
 - (a) **Say all manner of evil against you “FALSELY”**. So be sure that we fit into that category.

 - (b) Second, that the REVILINGS and PERSECUTIONS are: **“FOR THE LORD JESUS’ SAKE”**, and not for our own blunders.

3. Did you take notice that these two verses which compose the 9th Be-Attitude are by far the longest in all of the preceding eight Be-Attitudes? Why not count the lines in each of the preceding ones, and then in this last one. There is something very significant in this last one being nearly triple in length.

4. Next, the REWARD which CHRIST promises to these dear REVILED ONES and to those who are PERSECUTED FOR HIS SAKE, shall **“BE GREAT IN HEAVEN”**. This is the first and the only time our Lord uses the term “GREAT” in all of these blessed Be-Attitudes. This speaks to me a heart-warming and comforting message. Those who have been the most HURT, the most INSULTED, and the most ridiculed will be BLESSED the MOST, that is, providing that it came at us FOR JESUS’ SAKE.

5. Christ instructs these who are REVILED AND PERSECUTED for HIS SAKE to REJOICE and BE EXCEEDING GLAD. In none of the other eight are those that are addressed endowed with this SUPER-ABUNDANCE of HEAVENLY JOY and GLADNESS. This is quite significant.

For JOY and GLADNESS are constructive, health building, and restoring emotions. Not only is this true physically, but especially is this a FACT from the EMOTIONAL side of our well being.

On the other end of the spectrum, those emotions of hate, bitterness, anger, fear, worry, or anxiety are EMOTIONAL and PHYSICAL HEALTH DESTROYERS.

6. Another observation: CHRIST is telling His REVILED and PERSECUTED ONES that they have good company in their being on the brunt end of the ill-will of the world, or possibly of backsliders also.

JESUS said that this same kind of treatment was bestowed upon His holy prophets in past generations. This gives us some insight into a SOURCE from whence REVILINGS and PERSECUTION arise which we may not have taken into consideration. Those Israelites who were dabbling in sin or that were in a BACKSLIDDEN condition were the ones who gave The Lord's prophets a hard time.

So it is today. Those who are living soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world according to **Titus 2:11-14** will most likely be the TARGET for insults from those who are not living the way they should.

Titus 2:11-14:

11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

That very passage of Scripture declares unto us the KIND OF CHURCH for which our Blessed Lord is coming: i.e., one that is REDEEMED FROM (not IN) ALL INIQUITY, and PURIFIED by CHRIST. This passage ought to be tied into and linked with **I John 3:2-3**. You will see why when you squeeze all the juice out of that portion of The Word.

1 John 3:2-3:

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

7. The seventh observation which we're noticing is: The closer we get to Jesus and the more like Him we become, the less we will be appreciated by those who are the most unlike HIM.

Those who persecute and do the REVILING are revealing the degree of the impurity and the filthiness which is in their own hearts.

Matthew 5:11: BLESSED ARE “YE” when people shall REVILE you and PERSECUTE you and shall say all manner of EVIL against you FALSELY, for “MY SAKE”.

OUR SUBJECT: REVILED FOR JESUS` SAKE. What is the meaning of this word “REVILED”?

Most of us have a fairly good idea, but it would help for us to have a little review just to REFRESH our memories.

DEFINITION OF REVILED: *To REPROACH, to treat with CONTEMPT, to speak in or with ABUSIVE LANGUAGE.*

SEVEN SCRIPTURES RELATING TO: “REVILE or REVILED”:

(a) **Isaiah 51:7-8:**

7 Hearken unto ME ye that know RIGHTEOUSNESS, the people in whose heart is MY LAW; FEAR YE NOT the REPROACH of MEN, NEITHER BE YE AFRAID of their REVILINGS.

8 For the moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool: but my righteousness shall be for ever, and my salvation from generation to generation.

That last verse really takes the CAKE. There isn't a one here on earth who can say it just like the LORD can put it out.

- Did you take notice that righteousness is associated with REPROACH of men and the cause of their REVILINGS?
- Did you observe our Lord's admonition THAT WE ARE NOT TO FEAR or BE AFRAID of their sarcasm and cynical remarks?

It would be most beneficial to take a good squint at **verse 12** in this very chapter and then proceed to include **verse 13**. Listen:

Isaiah 51:12-13:

12 I, even I, am he that comforteth you: who art thou, that thou shouldest BE AFRAID OF A MAN that shall die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass;

13 And forgettest the LORD thy MAKER that hath stretched forth the heavens, and laid the FOUNDATIONS of the earth; and hast FEARED CONTINUALLY

***every day because of the fury of the oppressor, as if he were ready to destroy?
and where is the fury of the oppressor?***

The Lord is putting us to shame when we allow our revilers and persecutors to get the best of us. We are connected with THE ALMIGHTY GOD, The CREATOR of all things.

HE will fight our battles with the oppressors and persecutors. He promised us in **Isaiah 54:17** that:

Isaiah 54:17: NO WEAPON that is formed against thee shall prosper; and (get this now) EVERY TONGUE that shall rise against thee in JUDGMENT thou shalt condemn. This is the HERITAGE of the servants of THE LORD, and their righteousness is of ME, saith THE LORD.

(b) This next verse dealing with REVILING takes us to Calvary:

Matthew 27:39-40:

39 They that passed by REVILED HIM (i.e., THE LORD JESUS CHRIST), wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

(c) ***Mark 15:32: They that were crucified with HIM (i.e., Christ) REVILED HIM.***

(d) ***John 9:28: Then they reviled him, and said: Thou art His (i.e., The Lord Jesus Christ) disciple, but we are Moses' disciples.***

(e) ***I Corinthians 4:12: Being REVILED, we bless; being PERSECUTED, we suffer (endure) it.***

(f) ***I Corinthians 6:9-10:***

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind,

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

BEWARE!!! A VERY SPECIAL WARNING is set forth in this passage of Scripture concerning "REVILERS", in particular, since this is the subject at hand and up for our present discussion. Since REVILERS are EXCLUDED from the Kingdom of God, a word to the wise is sufficient. If this verse, in itself, does not cool off some who are inclined in that direction, especially amongst the CARNAL MINDED . . .

Those who profess to be CHRISTIANS and are:

- YET CARNAL (see **I Corinthians 3:1-3**)
- Who have not, as yet, died out to old SELF and SIN (see **Romans 6:1-2; 6-17; Colossians 3:1-10**);
- Nor PUT OFF THE OLD MAN which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts (see **Ephesians 4:22-24**);
- Nor CRUCIFIED THE FLESH with its affections and lusts (see **Galatians 5:24**).

They need to experience all of these VITAL BIBLE EXPERIENCES as a safeguard in their relationship to fellow Christians who have experienced these NECESSARY GROWTH-IN-GRACE EXPERIENCES. For some have a tendency to join in with the REVILERS and PERSECUTORS who are DISCREDITING and DISREGARDING those who have arrived or who are in the process of arriving at these DEEPER EXPERIENCES IN GRACE.

1 Corinthians 3:1-3:

1 And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?

Romans 6:1-2:

1 What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?

2 God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

Romans 6:6-17:

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

Colossians 3:1-10:

1 If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:

6 For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience:

7 In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.

8 But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:

Ephesians 4:22-24:

22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Galatians 5:24: And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

(g) *I Peter 2:23: WHO* (i.e., THE Lord Jesus Christ) *when HE WAS REVILED, REVILED not again; when HE suffered, HE threatened not; but committed HIMSELF to HIM* (i.e., The Almighty God) *who JUDGEETH RIGHTEOUSLY.*

Did you observe that of each and every reference to BEING REVILED, six of them are directly or indirectly associate or related to CHIRST? or to RIGHTEOUSNESS? as in:

Isaiah 51:8: For the moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool: but my righteousness shall be for ever, and my salvation from generation to generation.

This FACT reveals to us exactly what our LORD JESUS is saying to us in this text in **Matthew 5:11:**

Blessed are ye, when men shall REVILE you, and PERSECUTE you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, FOR "MY SAKE".

Or, *for "RIGHTEOUSNESS' SAKE"* as in the previous reference in **verse 10.**

NOTE: For THE SAKE of THE NAME OF THE LORD JESUS - - - **Matthew 5:11.**

1. *Matthew 10:22: Ye shall be HATED of ALL for MY NAME'S SAKE: but he that endureth to THE END shall be SAVED.*

2. *Mathew 16:25: For whosoever will save (spare) his life shall lose it: and whosoever will LOSE HIS LIFE for "MY SAKE" shall find it.*

3. *Matthew 19:29: Everyone that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, FOR "MY NAME'S SAKE" shall receive an HUNDREDFOLD and shall Inherit EVERLASTING LIFE.*

4. *Mark 10:29-30:*

29 JESUS answered and said: Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for "MY SAKE", and THE GOSPEL'S,

30 But he shall receive an HUNDREDFOLD now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with PERSECUTIONS: and in the world to come ETERNAL LIFE.

5 *Mark 13:9: TAKE HEED to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to Councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be BEATEN: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for "MY SAKE" for a testimony against them.*

Luke 21:12: But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for MY NAME'S sake.

6. Luke 6:22: Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall REPROACH you, and cast out your name as evil, for THE SON OF MAN'S SAKE.

7. John 15:21: All these things will they do unto you for MY NAME'S SAKE, because they know not HIM that sent ME.

8. Acts 9:15: But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he (Saul) is a chosen vessel unto ME, to bear MY NAME before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.

9. Romans 8:36-37:

36 As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.

37 Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.

10. Romans 15:30-31:

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for THE LORD JESUS CHRIST'S SAKE, and for the love of THE SPIRIT, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to GOD for me;

31 that I may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judaea; and that my service which I have for Jerusalem may be accepted of the saints.

11. I Corinthians 4:10: We are FOOLS for "CHRIST'S SAKE" but ye are wise in Christ; we are weak, but ye are strong; ye are honorable, but we are despised.

12. 2 Corinthians 4:5: For we preach not ourselves, but CHRIST JESUS THE LORD; and ourselves your servants FOR JESUS' SAKE.

13. 2 Corinthians 4:11: For we which live are ALWAYS delivered unto death for JESUS' SAKE, that the life of JESUS might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

14. 2 Corinthians 12:10: Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in REPROACHES, in necessities, in PERSECUTIONS, in distresses "FOR CHRIST'S SAKE": for when I am weak, then am I strong.

15. ***Ephesians 4:32: Be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as GOD for CHRIST'S SAKE hath forgiven you.***
16. ***Philippians 1:29: For unto you it is given in the behalf of CHRIST, not only to believe on HIM, but also to suffer for HIS SAKE.***
17. ***I Peter 2:13-14:***
13 Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for THE LORD'S SAKE: whether it be to the king, as supreme,
14 or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by HIM for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well.
- I John 2:12: I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you "FOR HIS NAME'S SAKE".***
18. ***3 John 1:7-8:***
7 Because "FOR HIS NAME'S SAKE" they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.
8 We therefore, ought to receive such, that we might be fellow helpers to the truth.
19. ***Revelation 2:3: Thou has borne, and hast patience, and "FOR MY NAME'S SAKE" has labored, and hast not fainted.***
20. ***Isaiah 43:25: I, even I, AM HE that blotteth out thy transgressions "FOR MINE OWN SAKE", and will not remember thy sins.***

(Brother, sister, if that does not RING a BELL in your BELFREY, then the clapper is missing. Or, putting it in another way: "If that does not set your soul on fire, then your wood's wet.")

THAT'S NOT ALL, THERE'S SOMETHING MORE . . .

TEXT: ***Matthew 5:12: REJOICE, and be EXCEEDING GLAD: for GREAT is your REWARD in HEAVEN; for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.***

1. The Lord Jesus is telling His PEOPLE who are REVILED and PERSECUTED for HIS NAME'S SAKE to keep their eyes and thoughts and attention focused on the future REWARDS now awaiting for them up there on the SUNNY SHORES of SWEET DELIVERANCE, i.e., HEAVEN. That is sound advice for all of us. For we are inclined to dwell on the persecutors and on the nature of their persecutions and revilings, and

then get the blues and grubby-mugs, feeling sorry for ourselves. To keep our ATTENTION and AFFECTIONS stayed on CHRIST and our FUTURE HOME, that will cheer us all up.

2. Some Christians amuse and other amaze me when they say that we ought to get some goodies in the now, and not have to wait until the sweet by and by. They do not realize those REWARDS are kept up there for safety's sake and for their SECURITY. What we'd receive down here would be only temporary, but that which is laid up for us on THE OTHER SIDE is eternal. Wisdom will tell us to focus our attention on THE ETERNAL, rather than on the TEMPORAL.

3. The Lord Jesus said: ***GREAT is your REWARD in HEAVEN.*** When HE calls anything GREAT, well . . . that's something else!!!! And I don't believe we'll have long to wait!



HOMEWORK: LESSON NINE
HOW TO BE HAPPY AND LIVE THE BLESSED LIFE

1. What is the difference in the motivation for persecution between Mathew 5:10 and Mathew 5:11?
2. Do you believe that holiness, heart purity, righteousness, and Godliness of life are a necessity to make it into the Kingdom of Heaven? Why?
3. In Matthew 5:11, the persecutions relate specifically to that phase of righteousness which comes from the Lord Jesus Christ as our righteousness.
4. Where does righteousness come from?
5. What are the two qualifying reasons necessary for us to be blessed and enjoy a great reward in heaven?
6. What is the “seventh” observation concerning Matthew 5:11 found in your study guide on page 251?
7. Write out the definition of revile according to your study guide.
8. Isaiah 51:7-8 says: Hearken unto me, ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law; _____ the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their _____. For the moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool: but my righteousness shall be for ever, and my salvation from generation to generation.
9. What does Isaiah 54:17 say about those that persecute you for Christ’s sake?
10. Looking at the scriptures quoted relating to revile or reviled, what are the two reasons that we are reviled?
11. What does Matthew 10:22 say about those of us that are hated of all for My (Christ) Name’s sake?
12. We are inclined to focus or dwell on the persecutors and on the nature of their persecutions and revilings, but what should we be focusing on?